Life of Christopher Columbus

Clements R. Markham

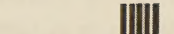
#G62d

#G62d

Life of Christopher Columbus

Clements R. Markham

* GREAT content, but MOST difficult to READ.



Copyright © BiblioLife, LLC

This historical reproduction is part of a unique project that provides opportunities for readers, educators and researchers by bringing hard-to-find original publications back into print at reasonable prices. Because this and other works are culturally important, we have made them available as part of our commitment to protecting, preserving and promoting the world's literature. These books are in the "public domain" and were digitized and made available in cooperation with libraries, archives, and open source initiatives around the world dedicated to this important mission.

We believe that when we undertake the difficult task of re-creating these works as attractive, readable and affordable books, we further the goal of sharing these works with a global audience, and preserving a vanishing wealth of human knowledge.

Many historical books were originally published in small fonts, which can make them very difficult to read. Accordingly, in order to improve the reading experience of these books, we have created "enlarged print" versions of our books. Because of font size variation in the original books, some of these may not technically qualify as "large print" books, as that term is generally defined; however, we believe these versions provide an overall improved reading experience for many.

LIFE

OF

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

BY

CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B

LONDON:
GEORGE PHILIP & SON, 32 FLEET STREET.
LIVERPOOL: 45 TO 51 SOUTH CASTLE STREET
1892.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/isbn_9781115293723

VOYAGES:
1ST - Pg - 64 (1492)
2nd - Pg 148 (1493)
3rd - Pg 163 (1494)
4th - Pg 185 (1498)

CONTENTS.

CHAP.		PAGE
I.	THE HOME AT GENOA	1
	Notes	
	1. The birthplace	13
	2. Date of birth	13
	3. Student at Pavia	15
	4. Story of swimming on shore in Portugal	16
II.	COLUMBUS IN PORTUGAL	17
	Notes	
	1. The marriage of Columbus in Portugal and the fables based on it	36
	2. Early use of the compass	38
	3. Expression in a letter as to leaving his wife and children	38
III.	COLUMBUS IN SPAIN	39
	Notes	
	1. Question of the marriage of Beatriz Enriquez	60
	2. Question respecting the voyage of Bartolomè Diaz	62
	3. The visits to La Rabida	63
IV.	THE FIRST VOYAGE	64
	Note.	
	1. The reward for sighting the land	87
V.	THE LANDFALL	89
VI.	DISCOVERY OF THE NEW WORLD	108
	Note.	
	1. The first letter announcing the discovery of the New World	131

CHAP.		PAGE
VII	RECEPTION OF THE NEWS	133
	Note	
	1 Discovery that Columbus wrote to Toscanelli on his return	147
VIII	THE SECOND VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY, AND THE SETTLEMENT OF ESPAÑOLA	148
IX	THE THIRD VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY, AND TROUBLES IN ESPANOLA	163
X	THE FOURTH VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY, AND PACIFICATION OF THE COLONY	185
XI	COLUMBUS IN CHAINS	202
	Note	
	1 The supposed preservation of the irons	225
XII	VOYAGES TO THE WESTWARD CONSEQUENT ON THE ACHIEVEMENT OF COLUMBUS 1 CABOT 2. CORTEREAL. 3 COMPANIONS OF COLUMBUS	226
	Notes	
	1. The coast-line of North America on the Cantino map	247
	2 On the statement of Navarrete that Ojeda found Englishmen at Coquivacoa	248
XIII	THE LAST VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY	250
XIV	ABANDONED AT JAMAICA	269
	Note.	
	1 Date of the Yucatan voyage of Pinzon and Solis	284
XV	DEATH OF THE ADMIRAL	286
	Notes	
	1 The will of Columbus	301
	2 Question of the removal of the Admiral's body	302
	3 Note on the alleged inaccuracies of Columbus	302
XVI	THE ADMIRAL'S SONS 1 DIEGO AND HIS DESCENDANTS	304
XVII	THE ADMIRAL'S SONS 2. FERNANDO AND THE OTHER AUTHORITIES FOR THE LIFE OF COLUMBUS	322
XVIII	AMERIGO VESPUCCI AND THE NAME OF AMERICA	344
INDEX		357

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

PORTRAITS OF COLUMBUS.

1. From a Painting formerly in the Gallery of Paolo Giovio . . . . . *Frontispiece*
2 From a Painting in the possession of the Family, engraved in 1791 . . . . *to face page 69*
3 From Thevet's "Vies des Hommes Illustres" . . *page* 181
4 From "Elogia Virorum Illustrium," Basel, 1575 . . ,, 211
5 From Th. de Bry's "Grands Voyages," 1595 . . ,, 294

6 Home of the Father of Columbus . . . *page* 2
7 House of Columbus at Genoa . . . . ,, 5
8. Portrait of Las Casas . . *to face page* 33
9 Oceanica Classis (Leandro de Cosco, 1493) . . . *page* 67
10. Landfall of Columbus, 1493 . . . . . ,, 82
11. Arms of Columbus . . . . . ,, 138
12 Gold Washers (from Oviedo) . . . ,, 177
13. Facsimile of a Letter of Columbus, April 2, 1502 . ,, 217
14. The Triumph of Columbus . . . . . ,, 221
15 House at Valladolid in which Columbus died . . ,, 291
16 Ruins of the Palace built by Diego Columbus at San Domingo (from Guillermin's Voyage) . . . . ,, 307
17. Facsimile from the "Cosmographiæ Introductio," 1507 ,, 352

LIST OF MAPS.

PRINTED IN COLOURS.

*The Four Voyages of Columbus . . *to face page* 1
From Huelva to Cadiz . . . . . *page* 40
Guanahani or San Salvador . . *to face page* 106
Guanahani to Cuba . . . . . *page* 106
*The West Indies . . . *to face page* 109
*Española and the Columbine Forts . . . ,, ,, 149
The Gulf of Paria . . . . *page* 180
Veragua and Castilla del Oro . . . . ,, 260

Fra Mauro's Map of the World, 1457 . . *to face page* 18
Western Part of the Catalan Map, 1275 . . *page* 19
*Ptolemy's Map of the World, 150 . . . *to face page* 34
*Behaim's Globe, 1492 . . . . ,, ,, 73
*The West Indies, by Herrera, 1601 . . . ,, ,, 92
Part of Juan de la Cosa's Map, 1500 . . . *page* 130
Hydrographia sive Charta Marina Portugalensium, c. 1504 ,, 230
Portion of the West Indies, from the "Weimar Map" . ,, 323
America, by Hylacomylus, 1507 . . . . . ,, 353

P9-1

LIFE OF
CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

CHAPTER I.

THE HOME AT GENOA.

Republic of Genoa

The city of Genoa was still a mighty power in the Mediterranean when the great discoverer, Christopher Columbus, was born, towards the middle of the fifteenth century. Its highest state of prosperity passed away with the fall of Constantinople, when its factories in the Crimea, at Pera, and in the Levant were lost or weakened. But the Republic, though forced to seek protection alternately from France and Milan, continued to be powerful by reason of the enterprise and maritime skill of her sailors, the ability of her merchants, and the credit of her bank of St. George. Less formidable and less independent than in the previous two centuries, the beautiful city was still the chief centre of Mediterranean trade, and was never more full of intellectual activity. But since 1421 the Republic had been under the protection of the Duke of Milan. The Genoese were thus drawn into the contest for the succession of Naples, Milan and the Pope supporting Louis of Anjou against

Since 1421

Pg-2

King Alfonso of Aragon. Genoa fringes the sea, and the green Ligurian Alps, cleft by narrow fertile valleys, rise up behind the palaces and churches of the city. The Republic derived its strength not only from the citizens, and the sailors whose homes were in the seaports of the Riviera, but also from the sturdy farmers and artisans in the valleys of the maritime Alps.

In one of these valleys, to the eastward of Genoa,

HOME OF THE FATHER OF COLUMBUS AT TERRAROSSA

called Fontanabuona, there lived a farmer named Giovanni Colombo, with his son Domenico, in the hamlet of Terrarossa, near Moconesi. They moved to a little fishing village, called Quinto al Mare, about four miles east of Genoa, where Domenico adopted the trade of a cloth weaver. He had a brother, Antonio, and a sister, Battistina, married to one Fritallo; all settled at Quinto. Antonio had three sons, named Giovanni

Antonio, Mateo, and Amighetto, of whom we shall hear again in the course of the story. Domenico throve so well that in the year 1439 we find him established as a citizen of Genoa, and engaging an apprentice named Antonio de Leveiono. A few years afterwards he was in a position to marry and support a family.

Domenico Colombo sought a wife in the valley of the Bisagno, a stream which finds its way to the sea close to the eastern wall of the city. The long valley through which the Bisagno flows is very fertile, and is gemmed with hamlets, villas, and gardens. The peasantry of the Val di Bisagno were loyal subjects of Genoa, but they clung to their local liberties. Every year, on Christmas Eve, they elected their new "Abbot" or Governor. The people assembled on the banks of the river, and two large stones were placed close to one another. The retiring Abbot, attired in his toga and beretta, stood on one, the newly-appointed Abbot on the the other. Then the latter received from his predecessor the standard of St. George. In the evening the Abbot and people proceeded to Genoa to pay their respects to the Doge in his palace. In the midst of the procession was a cart dragged by a yoke of oxen, containing a huge tree hung with wreaths of flowers. The tree was dragged into the courtyard of the palace, and the Abbot of Bisagno went up to pay his respects to the Doge, and make this customary offering. He and his people went home rejoicing, with a present of money, and in the night the Doge and his courtiers made a bonfire of the tree, and poured wine into the flames.*

Among these inhabitants of the Val di Bisagno, there was a silk-weaver living in the village of Quezzi, named

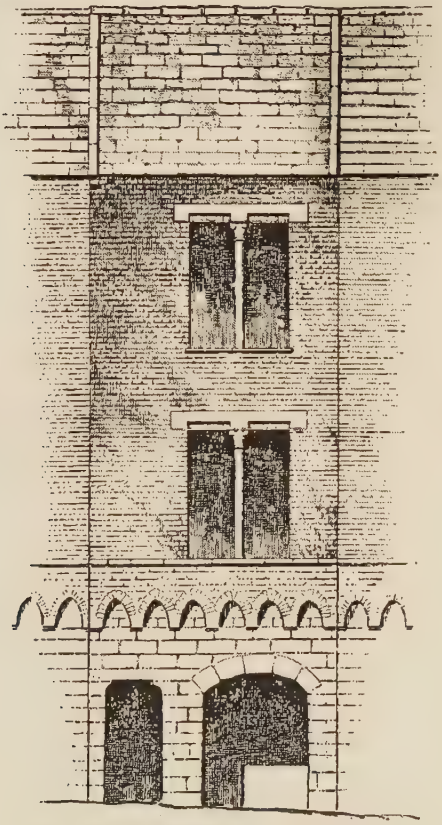
* Bent's Genoa, p. 12

Giacomo di Fontanarossa, who had two sons, Goagnino and Guglielmo, and a daughter, Susanna. Thither came the young cloth-weaver, Domenico Colombo; and in due time Susanna became his wife, with a dowry consisting of money, and some land in the neighbouring hamlet of Ginestrato.

The young couple naturally took up their abode in the weavers' quarter at Genoa, outside the old gate of San Andrea. The monks of San Stefano held a considerable extent of land outside this gate, divided into lots, which were let out to weavers, carders, and fullers. Domenico held two small houses under them, one near the Porto dell Olivella, and the other, where he lived with his wife, between the gate of San Andrea and the lane or Vico di Mulcento. The walls of Genoa were built in 1155 as a defence against the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa, and the gate of San Andrea was flanked by two round towers. Thence a street called Vico Dritto di Ponticello led to the church of San Stefano, and the Vico di Mulcento branched from it, parallel to the city walls. The house of Domenico Colombo was in the Vico Dritto, between the gate of San Andrea and the Vico di Mulcento, on the left hand side, coming from the gate. It is now No. 37, and was bought by the municipality of Genoa in 1887, who have placed an inscription on its wall. The neighbours were Antonio Bondi on one side, and Giovanni Pallavonia on the other. The ground floor was occupied by the loom where Domenico and his apprentices worked, and behind there was a garden extending to the city walls.

The first child of Domenico Colombo and Susanna Fontanarossa was born at Genoa,[1] almost certainly in this house, in the year 1446 or early in 1447,[2] when

Raffaele Adorno was Doge of Genoa. He was named Cristoforo. The next child was probably born in 1448,



HOUSE OF COLUMBUS AT GENOA.

and was named Giovanni Pellegrino. Bartolomeo was born in 1450. Then there was an interval. The only

9-b

sister, Blanchineta, was born in 1464, and the youngest child, Giacomo, in 1468. The place of baptism of the children of Domenico Colombo was the church of San Stefano, at the end of the Vico Dritto, where the weavers had their special altar. Founded in 1258, it had a picturesque campanile, and a marble façade in alternate white and black courses, a mode of building only permitted for churches, and for the palaces of a few of the chief noble families.

The Vico Dritto ending near the church of San Stefano, the old gate of San Andrea with its flanking towers, and the garden bounded by the city walls, were the first things that became familiar to the eyes of little Cristoforo Colombo and his brothers. The weavers established special schools for their children in the San Andrea quarter, and in one of these Cristoforo received his first lessons in writing, arithmetic, and geography. He was then apprenticed to his father, and his chief work for many years was the carding of wool and the weaving of cloth. But the boy from a very early age indulged in day dreams, and his young mind was filled with thoughts which took him far from the work of his trade. His aspirations could not be restrained. He first went to sea at the age of fourteen, and voyages to all parts of the Mediterranean broke the course of his ordinary life as a cloth-weaver in his father's workshop.

When Cristoforo passed into the city, through the gate of San Andrea, he was within a few minutes' walk of the busy harbour. Standing under the shadow of the stately edifice occupied by the bank of St. George, he feasted his eyes on the ships and war galleys in the harbour; and if he ascended the heights of Sarzano or Carignano, he could watch them until they became tiny

white specks on the horizon. When he was ten years old, Genoa was placed under the protection of the King of France, and the expedition of the gallant young John of Calabria, son of King Réné, was fitted out in the harbour, and sailed for the recovery of Naples on the 4th of October 1459. Cristoforo was then a red-haired boy of twelve, with bright blue eyes and florid complexion. How eagerly he must have gazed at the ten stately war galleys, forming the fleet of the French adventurer, as they lay at anchor with all their flags and pennons fluttering in the breeze. How he must have longed to be taken on board one of them, and how his young heart must have beat with excitement, as he saw them sail away. We may still, with the aid of Sanutus and Colonel Yule, picture to ourselves what Cristoforo saw. These war galleys were 120 feet long and very narrow, not more than 15½ feet beam, but the width was increased by an outrigger deck projecting beyond the ship's side, and supported by timber brackets, to give room for the fighting men. A castle rose up amidships, and the battery was in the bows. There were from twenty-two to twenty-eight benches for rowers on each side, placed diagonally, so that each rower could handle a separate oar, while using the same *portella* or rowlock; and along the centre line of the deck, fore and aft, there was a raised gangway, called *corsia*, to afford a passage clear of the oars. The galleys were built for war purposes and for speed, but they were very low and could not keep the sea in rough weather. Even with a smooth sea the toil of rowing was excessive, yet the work was performed by freely enlisted men, *galeotti assoldati*, and it was not until the following century that slaves were employed, several tugging at a single large oar. The Genoese merchant

9-8

ships were of a very different build, with much more beam in proportion to their length, and supplied with masts and sails.

Columbus himself tells us that he first went to sea at the age of fourteen, that is in the year 1461, but whether in a merchant ship or in a war galley is left to conjecture. In March of the same year the Genoese rose against the French, killed many in the streets, and forced the rest to take refuge in the castle of Casteletto, which was surrendered in the following July. The Doge, Prospero Adorno, defeated a French invasion, but the Fregosi, who succeeded, found that the Republic was too weak to stand alone, and placed it under the protection of Francesco Sforza, Duke of Milan, in 1464. It was during these stirring times that the future discoverer made his first voyage out of Genoa, and he continued to lead a seafaring life until he became a thorough sailor, while he worked at his father's trade during the intervals on shore. We have scarcely any details of these voyages, but he must have visited all parts of the Mediterranean, and we know that he was at the island of Chios, and in Sicily.*

Young Cristoforo did not content himself with a knowledge of practical seamanship. He must have been a zealous student of cosmography and history, for it is certain that he acquired his knowledge in these early years, as well as his remarkable skill as a penman and a draughtsman. In those days there was no better place in the world for such studies than Genoa. Forzio had written the history of the Chioggian war with Venice, Bracelli had narrated the naval victory over Alfonso of Aragon in a style which was compared with Sallust, and at

* Navarrete, i 41.

least two members of the ducal family of Fregoso were authors and poets as well as statesmen. Above all, Andalone di Negro, the poet, mathematician, and astronomer, and the master of Boccaccio, lived well into the fifteenth century, and wrote a treatise on the use of the astrolabe, which was printed at the very time when Columbus was completing his studies, before finally leaving his home. Genoa also rivalled Venice and Ancona at this time in the production of *portolani*, or beautifully executed sea-charts of the Mediterranean and western coasts of Europe and Africa. The Portolano Mediceo, now at Florence, was executed a century earlier; but Grazioso Benincasa was in the height of his fame as a draughtsman at Genoa during the youth of Columbus. He was a native of Ancona, but he was working at Genoa when Columbus began his sea life, and it is more than probable that the quick-witted and talented boy found employment in the workroom of the great draughtsman. There he would see delineated the "Insula del Iognana," Antilla and Brasill far out in the western ocean, and thus the first germ of his mighty thought would be implanted in his young mind. The planisphere of Bartolomeo Pareto, drawn at Genoa in 1455, which shows St. Brandan, Antilla, and Royllo on the verge of the unknown, might also have been familiar to him. Over a score of the maps of Benincasa are still in existence, two or three in the British Museum; and as we admire their beautiful workmanship, we may reflect that the boy Cristoforo may well have gazed upon them too, while his teeming brain indulged in a day dream, which the maturity of his genius would convert into a reality.

These conjectures respecting the training of Columbus

cannot be far from the truth, because we find in him such matured knowledge so soon after his departure from Italy, that it can only have been acquired by long study, and in Genoa. Las Casas tells us that Columbus received part of his education at the university of Pavia.[3] He would not have gone there to study any subject bearing on the seaman's art, for Genoa would be the place for that; but a knowledge of Latin was needful for him in the perusal of works on the sphere, and it is not at all unlikely that, as a young man, he may have gone to Pavia to acquire latinity. It is clear from the knowledge shown by Bartolomeo afterwards, that his younger brother was the companion of Cristoforo in his studies. It is most probable that the grand idea of Columbus had found a birth in his mind, and impelled him onwards to his destiny, before he finally left his home.

In 1470, when Cristoforo had attained the age of twenty-three years, the affairs of home called for a closer attention to business on the part of all the sons of Domenico Colombo. The industrious weaver had thriven and become a substantial citizen. He resolved to move to Savona, and to extend his business in various ways, while still retaining his house in the Vico Dritto. He was evidently a man of an enterprising spirit and more than average capacity. In order to provide capital for his new venture, he sold the little property at Ginestrato in September 1470. The consent of his wife Susanna to this sale was necessary, and as all the sons were under age, her brothers and other relations were summoned to give formal sanction to her consent, which was registered in the following May. Meanwhile Domenico Colombo had established himself at Savona,

not only as a weaver ("Textor pannorum"), but also as a tavern-keeper ("Tabernarius"); and in March 1470 he engaged an apprentice from his native valley of Fontanabuona, named Bartolomeo Castagneti. In this undertaking Domenico needed all the help that his three grown up sons could give him. Many and many a time must Cristoforo and his two brothers, now stalwart young men almost of legal age, have walked over the distance of twenty-six miles from Genoa to Savona while the change of abode was proceeding. The road skirts the seashore, and Cristoforo must have cast many a longing glance over the deep blue sea to the white sails on the distant horizon, while engaged on this work of piety. In 1469 he was witness to the will of a young comrade named Nicolo Monleone at Genoa. In 1472 and 1473 his father was buying wool on credit, and by a deed dated Savona, August 16, 1472, Cristoforo guaranteed one of his father's debts. More capital was needed, and Domenico Colombo sold his house at Genoa, near the Porta dell Olivella. The consent of his wife Susanna was again necessary, to be given with the sanction of her nearest relations of legal age. Her two eldest sons had now attained their majority, and the document was signed by Cristoforo and Giovanni Pellegrino Colombo, on the 7th of August 1473. This is the last time that Cristoforo Colombo appears as a wool-weaver ("Lanerio"), and the last piece of evidence of his presence in Italy.

Cristoforo had seen his family comfortably established at Savona. He had zealously and efficiently assisted his father in all the business involved in the change. He was now free to follow his own great destiny. By his own exertions and talent he had become not only an ex-

cellent practical seaman, but also a cosmographer and a draughtsman. He had acquired this knowledge subject to long interruptions, and while following the trade of a weaver. The difficulties in his way must have been such as only a youth of extraordinary genius and strength of will could have overcome. He was deeply imbued with the religious spirit of his age and country. From a child he had belonged to one of the religious guilds, and all the acts of his life were tinged with devotional feeling. I cannot doubt that, even at this early period, he had the germs in his mind of the great enterprise of his life. He had reached the age of twenty-eight when he left his native land and the home of his youth, and made his way to the country which, of all others, seemed to him most likely to afford the means of fulfilling his destiny. Columbus left Genoa and went to Portugal in 1474.(4)

Soon after the departure of Cristoforo, his next brother, Giovanni Pellegrino, died. The last documentary evidence of the presence of Bartolomeo at Savona is dated June 16, 1480. He probably joined his brother at Lisbon in the latter part of that year. The only sister, Blanchineta, married a cheesemonger named Giacomo Bavarello. The father of Bavarello had a house near the San Andrea gate, and Giacomo had probably known the young Colombos, and played with them in the Vico Dritto from infancy. The only child of the Bavarelli, named Pantaleone, was born in 1490. The mother of the great discoverer, Susanna Fontanarossa, died at Savona in about 1483. Then the business of Domenico began to fail. He no longer had grown up sons to help him. So he resolved to abandon the enterprise at Savona, and to return to Genoa. His youngest child, Giacomo, was six-

teen, and his father apprenticed him to a weaver at Savona, named Luchino Cademartoni, for twenty-two months. When he had served his time he joined his father at Genoa, and remained with him until the wonderful news of his brother's great achievement reached him, when he hurried to Spain to share the prosperity of his family. The old father was left alone. On the 31st of March 1492 he gave up the old home in the Vico Dritto to his son-in-law Bavarello, and his last years were probably passed with his daughter Blanchineta. He lived to extreme old age, long enough to be gladdened by the news of the great discovery, to receive help from his illustrious son, and letters from his grandsons. Domenico Colombo was a man of enterprise, and of great physical activity. The formation of the establishment at Savona is a proof of his spirit of enterprise; and his frequent journeys to Savona, down to the year 1492, are evidence of his activity. Domenico Colombo and Susanna Fontanarossa were good types of the Ligurian peasantry, and their fine qualities helped to form the character of their illustrious son. They were worthy to be the parents of the greatest maritime genius of the fifteenth century.

NOTES.

(1) *Date of the Birth of Columbus.*

Columbus was certainly born in the city of Genoa, for he himself said, "De la ciudad de Genova sali, y en ella naci"—"I came from the city of Genoa, and in it I was born."

(2) The date of the birth of Columbus is fixed by various statements incidentally made by himself in his letters, which all harmonise with each other, and by legal documents at Genoa. The first statement was that when he first went to

sea he was fourteen, and that when he came to Spain in 1485 he had led a sailor's life for twenty-three years. This makes 1447 the year of his birth. The next is in a letter dated 1501, where he says that it is forty years since he first went to sea. He went to sea at the age of fourteen, and was therefore fifty-four in 1501. This again makes 1447 the year of his birth. The third is in a letter dated July 7, 1503 (*Navarrete* i. 311), where he says, "Yo vine a servir a veinte y ocho años"—"I came to serve at twenty-eight years of age." He refers to the time when he first devoted his services to the great discovery, and came to Portugal in 1474. Once more 1447 is shown to be the year of his birth.

The evidence at Genoa consists of two documents in which the mother of Columbus consented to the sale of property by her husband. For the first deed, dated May 25, 1471, the judge summoned her brothers and other relations to authorise her consent. The second, dated August 7, 1473, is signed by her son Cristoforo. This shows that he attained the legal age of twenty-five between the two dates, and makes 1447 the year of his birth. There is another document, dated 10th September 1484 binding the youngest brother, Giacomo apprentice at the age of sixteen. Giacomo was therefore born in 1468. If, as some authorities contend, Columbus had been born in 1436, the mother would be over fifty when Giacomo was born, which is impossible.

The only ground for the contention that Columbus was born in 1436 is the statement of Andres Bernaldez, a Spanish priest, who knew the Admiral in his later years (*Historia de los Reyes Catolicos*, cap. cxxxi.), that he was seventy years of age, a little more or less, when he died. Bernaldez had no knowledge of the date of his birth, and merely judged from his worn and aged appearance.

The reason that the authorities who advocate the earlier date wish to make Columbus older than he was, is that a passage in Las Casas, and in the "Historie" of Fernando Columbus, translated by Ulloa, may be reconciled with facts. In a letter to King Ferdinand, dated January 1501, not now in existence, Columbus is alleged by Las Casas, and in the "Historie," to have made the following statement with reference to the use of the compass. "It happened to me that King Réné, whom God has taken to Himself, sent me to Tunis to take the galley

Fernandina, and being off the island of San Pedro in Sardinia, I heard from a despatch boat that there were two ships and a carrack with the said galley. On this the people who were with me determined not to go on, but to return to Marseilles for another ship and more men. I saw that, without some artifice, I could not force their wishes, so I consented to their demand. Changing the compass card, I weighed at dusk, and next day at sunrise we were off the Cape of Carthagena, when they all made certain that we were at Marseilles."

In 1461 the Genoese rose against the French and from that time King René was the enemy of Genoa; but he never attempted any expedition in the Mediterranean after the failure of his son in 1460. The event must, therefore, have taken place before 1461. If Columbus was born in 1447, he was thirteen in 1460, and could not have commanded one of King René's ships of war. If he was born in 1436, he was a young weaver of twenty-four, and the conferring of such a command upon him would be almost as improbable. A captain of a war galley would be an officer of rank and experience. But as late as 1473, in legal documents, Columbus is called "Lanerio di Janua" (weaver of Genoa), not "Capitano di Galea."

The statement, as it stands, cannot therefore be true. Fernando Columbus, from whose notes Ulloa and Las Casas copied, quoted the passage from memory, attributing to Columbus himself an incident which he doubtless referred to, as having happened to one of René's officers. Fernando (cap. iv. of "Historie") fully admits his liability to error owing to inattention to such matters in his youth.

Muñoz, Robertson, Spotorno, Harrisse, D'Avezac, and Major rely upon the statements of Columbus himself, and adopt the date of 1446 or 1447. Navarrete, Humboldt, Lamartine, Washington Irving, Roselly de Lorgues, and Asensio rely upon the vague guess of Bernaldez that Columbus was about seventy when he died, and place his birth in 1436.

(3) *Student at Pavia.*

Fernando Columbus, as rendered both by Las Casas and by Ulloa in the "Historie," states that his father was at the university of Pavia. "Dieo adunque che nella sua piccola eta imparo lettere e studio in Pavia tanto che gli bastare per intendere i cosmographa." Mr. Harrisse doubts the story.

Nothing in Pavia University Archives.

Pavia taught philosophy and medicine, not cosmography, and a weaver apprentice would not be sent to cross the Apennines alone, in the fifteenth century, to learn cosmography, which was better taught at Genoa. There is nothing in the archives of the Pavia university on the subject, and Nicolo Scillacio, a Professor of Pavia, who published an account of the second voyage of Columbus, dedicated to Ludovico il Moro, says not a word about Columbus having been there. If he had been, Scillacio would almost certainly have mentioned it on such an occasion.

(4) *Story of Columbus having swum on shore in Portugal.*

Las Casas has a story (i. p. 51) that there was a famous corsair named Columbo Junior, who commanded a great fleet against Venetians, infidels, and other enemies of his nation. Cristopher Columbus determined to join him, and serve under him for a long time. This Columbo Junior, hearing that four Venetian galleys had gone to Flanders, waited for their return between Lisbon and Cape St. Vincent. A desperate naval action followed, the vessel on which Christopher Columbus served, was burnt, and with the help of an oar he reached the shore. Las Casas quotes as his authority for this event the chronicle of Sabellico (Lib. 8, Dec. 10, p. 168). This is the way in which Columbus is said to have found his way to Lisbon. Unfortunately for this story, the naval action in question is known to have taken place on August 22, 1485, more than ten years after the arrival of Columbus in Portugal. The "Columbo Junior" was really a French corsair named Casanove. The story must be rejected as apocryphal.

19-17

CHAPTER II.

COLUMBUS IN PORTUGAL

San Stefano, at the end of the Vico Dritto, was the parish church of the Colombo family On one of the marble courses of its façade were inscribed the names of the Admirals of Portugal of the Genoese family of Pessagni Cristoforo had seen them He had also seen the flag of St George marked on the *portolani*, where Genoese had made discoveries in command of Portuguese ships It was quite natural that, in seeking to work out his destiny, he should make his way to Portugal.

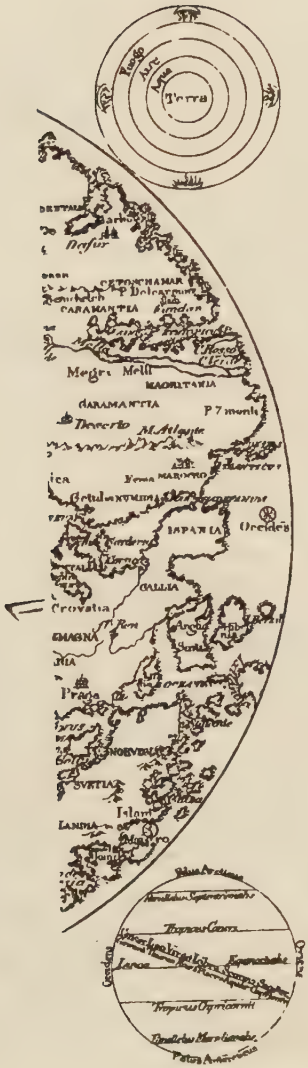
* In truth, the Genoese had been closely connected with Portuguese maritime affairs for more than a century In 1317 King Dinis secured the services of Emanuele Pessagno of Genoa to fill the post of hereditary Admiral of the Portuguese fleet, with the undertaking that he would find twenty experienced Genoese captains to command the ships. Portuguese ships, with Genoese commanders, rediscovered the Canary Islands in 1341 The Isle of Lanzarote was discovered by Lanzarote Melocello. On the *Portolano Mediceo* at Florence, which was drawn in 1351, the shield of Genoa is painted by the side of the island of Lanzarote, and a legend also records the discovery on the planisphere (1455) of Pareto Lancelot Pessagno succeeded his father Emanuele in 1357, and the office of Admiral of Portugal continued to be held

1341 CANARY Island

by members of this Genoese family until 1448. The enterprises of their captains were not confined to the voyage to the Fortunate Islands, which is mentioned by Petrarch. They also discovered the Azores early in the fourteenth century, although those islands were not colonised until long afterwards. They are shown on the Laurentian map of 1351.

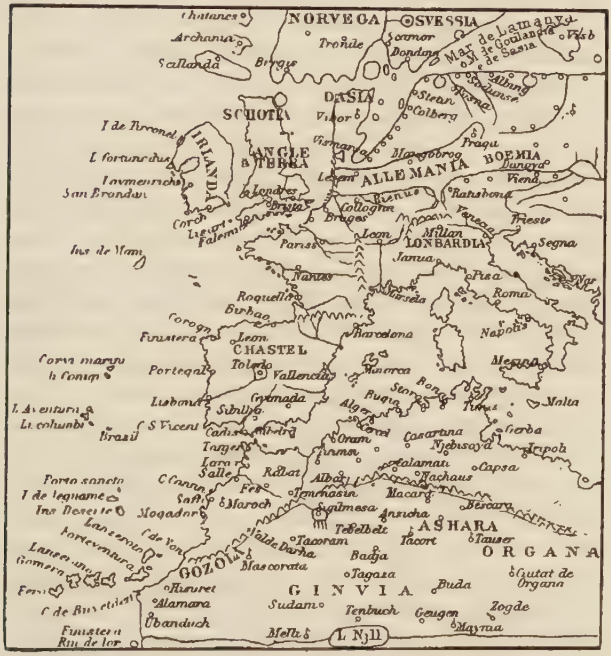
Prince Henry of Portugal was despatching vessels to discover the coast of Africa, from 1420 to 1460; and one of the explorers of his time was a Genoese, named Antonio Uso di Mare, who sailed beyond the Gambia with Cadamosto in 1457. Another Genoese, named Antonio di Noli, was with Diogo Gomez when the Cape Verde Islands were discovered in 1460; and Noli obtained the captaincy of the Island of Santiago, which he held until his death.

The disappearance of the name of Cristoforo Colombo from the notarial records of Genoa and Savona in the autumn of 1473, points to 1474 as the year of his arrival in Portugal. At this time he and his brother Bartholomew were known as Colombo di Terrarossa, from the birthplace and original home of their father. When Cristoforo reached Lisbon, Prince Henry the Navigator had been dead fourteen years. The state of geographical knowledge was represented by the map which the Prince's nephew, Affonso V, had caused to be constructed, so that all the new discoveries might be placed on record. The King intrusted the commission to Fra Mauro, of the Camaldolese Convent of San Miguel di Murano at Venice, assisted by a well-known draughtsman, several of whose *portolani* are still preserved, named Andrea Bianco. The completed work, which was an elaborate planisphere, was sent to Portugal in April 1459.


Terra
Aere
Aqua
Terra
Mare
GARAMANTIA
MAURITANIA
GARAMANTIA
Roma
MARMARICA
IAPANIA
GALLIA
Croatia
Praga
SVETIA
Islandia
Tropicus Cancri
Tropicus Capricorni

FRA MAURO. 1452-59.

The west coast of Africa had been explored from Cape Bojador to the Cape of St Catherine, which is over a hundred miles south of the equator. But all to the westward of the Azores and the Canaries was so utterly



WESTERN PART OF THE CATALAN MAP OF THE WORLD, 1375

dark and unknown, and progress to the west seemed so impossible, that the idea of penetrating in that direction had not even entered into men's minds. One youthful genius had alone conceived a settled plan. It had been born in his gifted brain before he left his home at

P9-20

Genoa. For its sake he had come to Portugal, and while eagerly acquiring all the new knowledge respecting the African coast, it was to the western limit of the charts that he most frequently turned his anxious gaze.

The fabulous western islands of the Atlantic almost seem to have been put on the old charts to lure mariners to the unknown west. The largest was called "Antilia," and first appeared on a *portolano* of 1425. It is placed on the chart of Andrea Bianco of Venice, bearing date 1436, in 25° 35′ W. But Ruysch, in his important map, which was engraved after the death of Columbus, removed it further west. "Antilia" here appears in 17° W. and 40° N., and the legend informs us that it was discovered long ago by Roderick, the last of the Gothic Kings of Spain, who took refuge there after his defeat by the Moors. Another tale was that two archbishops and five bishops escaped to Antilia, after the fall of Don Roderick, and that they built seven cities there. Hence it was sometimes called the Isle of the Seven Cities. Another fabulous island of the Atlantic was called Brazil. It is shown on the Catalan chart of 1375, which was drawn for Charles V. of France, as one of the Azores. Andrea Bianco has it on his chart of 1436. On the chart of Beincasa, dated 1469, which Columbus may have seen at Genoa, the isle of Brazil is placed to the westward of Limerick, and it has the same position on the chart of 1476 by the same draughtsman. The name may be derived from the Genoese word "*brazil*" for wood, converted by the Portuguese into *brazil*. The position of this island on the charts, away to the westward of the British Isles, attracted the attention of English mariners; and William of Worcester, in his Chronicle, relates that in July 1480 some ships sailed from Bristol

in search of the island of Brazil, under the command of a scientific master-mariner named Thlyde After being battered by the storms of the Atlantic for nine months, they returned to an Irish port without having seen any signs of Brazil The legend of St. Brandan, derived from an Irish source, caused the appearance of another mythical island in the western Atlantic Uso di Mare, in his journal, tells how, in the sixth century, St Brandan, Abbot of Ailech, who had 3000 monks under him, went to sea in company with St. Malo, in search of an island which always moved away from him It appeared on the planisphere drawn at Genoa by Pareto in 1455, far away to the westward of the Canaries, and continued to retain its place on maps and charts throughout the two following centuries Other fabulous islands occur on ancient charts, which were probably due to the fertile imaginations of the draughtsmen. "*La Capraia*" figures on the famous Hereford mappe-monde, which was drawn in the end of the thirteenth century, and "*L'Oro*" is on the Laurentian portolano. The island of "*Royllo*" has a place with Antilia and St Brandan on the planisphere of Pareto; and Benincasa, in 1476, has "*Isola di Mam*" and "*San Giorgio*"

The mythical islands of the western Atlantic, Antilia, Brazil, St Brandan, Royllo, San Giorgio, were realities to Columbus and his contemporaries A mystery hung round them, but there they were on the portolani and planispheres of the most learned cosmographers, delineated as lands which might be reached through the daring and skill of resolute explorers They were of special importance to the genius who had conceived the grand idea of a western voyage to India, for they appeared as stepping-stones on his route The predecessors of

Columbus had made known to him and his contemporaries the whole eastern side of the Atlantic, from the Equator to the Arctic Circle, with the groups of islands; and the map-makers seemed to line the illustrious Genoese on his destined path, by strewing the unknown ocean with the isles of legend and fable.

Columbus had heard of these things. He came to Portugal with the object of acquiring a personal knowledge of all that had been discovered. He was to pass through a long and hard apprenticeship, to become the foremost of living seamen in experience and knowledge, before he could secure acceptance for the mighty scheme which was already fermenting in his mind. Very little is known of the events of his life during the years that he spent in Portugal. It is believed that he earned a livelihood at first by drawing maps and charts. He made voyages along the African coast, and was at Madeira and Porto Santo. The first certain date is 1477, when he made a voyage to England and Iceland.

The passage respecting the visit of Columbus to Iceland is in the "History of the Indies," by Las Casas, and also in the "Historie" of Fernando Columbus. It professes to be a quotation from a letter of Columbus, but it bears evidence of, at least, two explanatory interpolations of later date. "In the month of February, and in the year 1477, I navigated as far as the island of Tile [Thule], a hundred leagues (whose southern part is 73° from the equator, and not 63°, as some say; and it is not within the line which includes the west, as Ptolemy says, but much further to the west), and to this island, which is as large as England, the English, especially those of Bristol, go with merchandise, and at the time that I was there the sea was not frozen

over, although there were very high tides, so much so that in some parts the sea rose twenty-five *brazas*, and went down as much, twice during the day (It is quite true that the Tile of Ptolemy is where he says it is, and this land is called Frislandia by the moderns)."

The passages in brackets are clearly interpolations. Las Casas began his work in 1527, and finished it in 1561 In the interval the map of Nicolo Zeno had been published in 1558, on which he placed an island which he called Frislandia, in 63° This accounts for the second bracketed passage, which contradicts the first. Both must be omitted, in reading what Columbus really wrote, which was that he sailed a hundred leagues to the island of Thule in February 1477, that the island is as large as England; that the English, especially those of Bristol, traded there; that the sea was not frozen over when he was there, and that the rise and fall of the tide was twenty-five *brazas*

It is very improbable that Columbus, during a short visit, should have heard of the discoveries of Norsemen sailing from Greenland more than three centuries before, and if he did, such information would not have furnished him with any argument for his proposed voyage westward to the Indies In the time of Columbus, Greenland was believed to be a peninsula of the continent of Europe, and it is so delineated on every map of that period without exception. If the great navigator did hear of Greenland, and of the wooded isles of Markland and Wineland, to the south of that promontory, he would think of them as a European peninsula, and as off-lying European islands. They would not appear to him to be of any significance with reference to the westward voyage to the Indies. His arguments are all

recorded, and the existence of wooded islands south of Greenland is not among them.

In the course of these three years, from 1474 to 1477, the talents of the young Genoese must have been recognised. No doubt he had become known as a cosmographer and a seaman of distinguished ability, and had won a certain position in Lisbon, when he made his Iceland voyage. On his return he was a man of some distinction, with courteous manners and noble bearing. He was above the middle height, with well-knit and vigorous limbs. Las Casas remembered him well, and described his face as oval, with a pleasant expression, the nose aquiline, the eyes blue, the complexion fair and inclined to ruddiness. Oviedo calls it somewhat fiery red and freckly. It was a fair complexion that turned red, rather than bronze, from exposure to the sun. The hair was red. Las Casas adds that he was agreeable and cheerful, and a good speaker. It must have been very soon after his return from Iceland, in the spring of 1477, that the handsome Genoese won the heart of Filippa Moniz. This noble lady was attached to the convent of All Souls at Lisbon, where Columbus was accustomed to hear mass. They met. Friendship ripened into love, and they were married. The date of the marriage is indicated by the birth of their son Diego. He was about the same age as Don Juan, the son of the Catholic sovereigns, who was born on June 30, 1478. If Diego was born at about that time, his parents were probably married towards the end of 1477. Filippa Moniz was a granddaughter of Gil Ayres Moniz, secretary to the famous Constable Pereira, in the days of João I., who founded the chapel of "Piedad," in the monastery of Carmen at Lisbon.

In this chapel the Moniz family had an exclusive right of interment

Isabel, a daughter of Gil Ayres Moniz, and aunt of Filippa, was the second wife of Bartolomeu Perestrello, who received a grant of Porto Santo in 1425, and died in 1457. Isabel had an only child, also named Bartolomeu, who was too young to assume the captaincy of the island at the time of his father's death But the widow was tired of living in such a lonely place. She therefore ceded the captaincy of Porto Santo to Pedro Correa da Cunha (who had married a daughter of her husband by his first wife) in 1458, and returned to Lisbon The younger Bartolomeu succeeded his brother-in-law in command of Porto Santo in 1473 It is likely enough, as is stated by Las Casas, that this connection of his wife with the widow of such a man as Perestrello may have led to the acquisition of much valuable information relating to maritime discovery, which would be useful to Columbus in his study of arguments for the western voyage.

* It is an interesting and curious coincidence that the lives of Christopher Columbus and Martin Behaim almost exactly coincide · Born in the same decade, they achieved the great work of their respective lives in the same year, and died in the same year. Behaim was a learned young Nuremburger, who, after passing some time in Portugal, found his way to Fayal in 1486, lived there for several years, and married a daughter of Jobst van Hueter, the Flemish governor of that island The great services performed by Behaim to nautical science connect his career somewhat closely with the labours and studies of Columbus Behaim devoted his talents to the improvement of that science of navigation, on the

development of which the success of the scheme of Columbus depended. The former was born at Nuremburg in 1436, and was a pupil of Regiomontanus, the great German astronomer, who died at Rome in 1475. Behaim was a merchant as well as a learned cosmographer and maker of instruments. Arriving at Lisbon in 1479, he was employed during the following year in adapting the complicated astrolabe of astronomers for use at sea. Two learned natives of Portugal were associated with him in this service, named Master Rodrigo and Master Joseph, a Jew. There is no record of the fact, but it can scarcely be doubted that Columbus, who was settled at Lisbon, was also consulted on a subject of which he had such special knowledge. It was at this time that he was joined by his brother Bartolomè, as we gather from the fact that the last notarial record of Bartolomè at Genoa bears the date of June 16, 1480. The two brothers had studied together, and there was the warmest attachment between them, which remained unshaken through life. Cristoforo was not only a cartographer, but, as Las Casas tells us, he wrote so good and legible a hand that he might, and probably did, earn his bread by it. Bartolomè possessed the same accomplishments in a scarcely less degree, and was an invaluable assistant to his brother.

The need for an instrument by which the latitude could be ascertained began to be felt as soon as navigators ceased to creep along the coast, and stood away out of sight of land. Diogo Gomez rightly attached much importance to his observations with a quadrant, when he discovered the Cape Verde Islands in 1460. The quadrant was a copper or brass triangle, one side being an arc graduated to 90°. The other two sides met at an apex where there was a ring, and whence a plumb line

hung across the arc Two sights were fixed on one side, and the observer held the instrument loosely by the ring As soon as the two sights were on with the sun, the arc was read off at the point where it was intersected by the plummet line, which gave the altitude This simple instrument differed from the astrolabe which was adapted by Martin Behaim and his coadjutors in 1480 The astrolabe used by astronomers was a complicated instrument, covered with confusing circles crossing each other and indicating points not required by plain seamen. A treatise on its use, which needs a good deal of close study for its mastery, was written by our own Chaucer. The problem referred to Behaim was the simplification of the astrolabe for use at sea. The sea astrolabe was a metal circle from 8 to 9 inches in diameter, and of some thickness in order to give it weight, for, like the quadrant, it was necessary to hold it by a ring in order that it might hang perpendicular to the horizon, when used for observing. It was crossed by two metal lines, one from the ring to the opposite side of the circle, called the zenith line, and the other crossing it, and called the horizon line. The circle was graduated to 90° from the horizon line to the zenith. A movable limb, called the *alidada*, worked over the circle, and a line was drawn down its centre—the "*linea fiducia*." Two sights were fixed on the *alidada*, which was moved until the sights were on with the sun The point where the "*linea fiducia*" cut the arc showed the altitude The observer was instructed to sit down and place himself with his back against the mainmast, hold the astrolabe by the ring hanging on the second finger of his left hand, and move the *alidada* up and down with his right, until the sun was on with both sights.

Pg- 28

The adaptation of instruments for observing the meridian altitudes of heavenly bodies, for use at sea, was a very important event in the history of maritime discovery. It brought the great scheme of Columbus nearer to maturity, for he knew that a long voyage across the ocean could not be undertaken without such aid. The arduous task of guiding a ship over the ocean, when nothing is seen but sky and sea for many days, would not be possible, unless astronomical observations could be taken. As old Cortes wrote in his art of navigation, the guidance of a ship makes it necessary to keep the eyes on the heavens—"poner los ojos en el cielo." The improvement of navigation was, as Columbus well knew, an essential part of the preparation for his great achievement. Expert in every department of his profession, he constructed his own instruments, as well as his nautical charts.

To find the latitude, the meridian altitude is only one element in the calculation. It is also necessary to have the sun's declination for each day of the year. The publication, for the first time, of tables of declination was contemporaneous with the adaptation of the astrolabe by Behaim. His master, Regiomontanus, completed his "Calendarium Novum" in 1475, which contained tables of the sun's declination calculated for the years from 1475 to 1566 inclusive.

The mariner's compass had been long in use, and the properties of the load-stone were well known to the learned as early as the thirteenth century. Roger Bacon was acquainted with them, although he nowhere mentions the use to which they might be put, and indeed, superstition and fear of witchcraft probably delayed and hindered the first use of the compass. Flavio Gioja of

Pg - 29

Amalfi, early in the fourteenth century, appears to have made some great improvement in the practical arrangements connected with the use of the magnet, if he did not, as is asserted, actually introduce it on board ship (2) Further improvements were adopted, and in the time of Columbus the magnetic needle had become a serviceable instrument A card was painted with the thirty-two points, a *fleur-de-lys* for the north, and a cross for the east A steel pin was fastened to the back of the card, of the same length as its diameter, and touched at each end with the *iman*, or load-stone. The centre of the card was made to work on a pyramid of brass, fixed in a circular box covered with glass; and the box rested on the metal circles, which swung with the ship, and kept the card steady.

The sea chart was the fifth, and not the least important aid to navigation Although the charts were drawn as if the world was a plane and a century would elapse before an improved projection would be invented, still they had been brought to great perfection; they were more accurate in outline than the maps produced at the same period by learned professors, and the execution of the portolani of Benincasa and Pareto, the probable masters of Columbus, is exceedingly beautiful.

Columbus had acquired a profound knowledge of the construction and manufacture of all the scientific machinery of a navigator—the astrolabe, quadrant, compass, and plane chart; and he was expert in the use of the declination tables, as well as in all calculations for the solution of problems in navigation, as they were understood in his time He found his longitudes by observing eclipses of the moon. He also studied with enthusiastic interest the few works on the sphere, and

Pg-30

on the Ptolemaic system of the universe, which were then in existence. The "Opusculum Sphericum," by Johannes de Sacrobosco, was the most popular manual of the principles of astronomy and cosmography in those days, and it was well known to Columbus. But the work to which he devoted his closest attention, and from which he derived his knowledge of Aristotle and Strabo, was the "Imago Mundi," written by Cardinal Pierre d'Ailly. The book was so familiar to him that his own copy, still preserved in the Colombian Library at Seville, has the margins annotated in his handwriting. Here he entered many things he had collected and read elsewhere. The "Imago Mundi" was finished in 1410, but not printed until seventy years afterwards; so that it can only just have reached the hands of Columbus during his residence at Lisbon, and perhaps it is more likely that he first obtained it in Spain. D'Ailly quotes largely from the "Opus Majus" of Roger Bacon and other authors, and fully discusses all the cosmographical theories of the time. Some of these, such as the uninhabitability of the torrid zone, Columbus was able to refute from his own experience, and he did so in the marginal notes.

* The studies of Columbus confirmed him in his great idea that India might be reached by sailing westward. His mind was made up on this point, after years of study and reflection, but he left no stone unturned, and his inquiries were directed to every quarter. For he not only had to satisfy his own reason, but also to convince others. In the very year of his arrival in Portugal he had addressed a letter to a learned Florentine seeking for information. Paolo Toscanelli was born in 1397, and was the most celebrated astronomer of that age. He is

specially known for the gnomon which he constructed in the Church of Santa Maria Novella at Florence. As a reply to the request of his Genoese correspondent, whom he evidently took to be a Portuguese, from the Lisbon address, Toscanelli sent him a copy of a letter and of a chart which he had previously despatched to a Canon of Lisbon who had made similar inquiries.

Toscanelli held that the way to the spice-yielding Indies by sailing westward was the shortest, and he demonstrated his conclusion on the chart which formed an enclosure to the letter. On this chart he showed, on one side, all the coasts from Ireland to Guinea, with the islands; and on the other side, the continent and islands of the Indies, with the distance that must be traversed to reach them. He then referred to the great trade of the Indies. In the port of Zaiton alone, which is one of the most beautiful and famous in the east, he said that there were a hundred ships laden with pepper at one time, without counting those laden with other spices. Zaiton was a famous seaport of the Chinese province of Fokien (Chwanchau-Fu), between Fuchow and Amoy, and Toscanelli took this statement about the pepper trade from the eighty-second chapter of Marco Polo. He went on to say that the country was large and populous, and that it was under the dominion of a prince called the Grand Khan, whose usual residence was Catay. In the time of Pope Eugenius IV. (1431–1447), Toscanelli said that the Grand Khan sent an ambassador to Rome, with whom he had conversations; and that this ambassador dilated upon the greatness of his country, where two hundred cities might be seen with marble bridges built over the same river. Toscanelli then referred to his map again, where there were

Pg-32

twenty-six spaces divided by meridional lines, between Lisbon and the famous city of Quisay, and he said that each space measures 150 miles. He thus only allowed a distance of less than 4000 miles. The Quisay of Toscanelli is the Kinsay of Marco Polo, fully described in his chapters lxxvi. and lxxvii., and now called Hangchau, south of Shanghai. He said that it was in the province of Mango near Catay and that it was twenty-five leagues round, the name, as Marco Polo said, meaning "City of Heaven." Toscanelli went on to say that from the island of Antilla to that of Cipango there were ten spaces, equal to 225 leagues, and that Cipango so abounded in gems and gold that the temples and palaces were covered with golden plates. The letter is dated June 25, 1474.

In another letter to Columbus the Florentine astronomer encouraged his design of sailing westward, and felt sure that his former letter had demonstrated that the voyage was not so difficult as was supposed. He assured his correspondent that he would find populous and wealthy cities, and provinces abounding in riches, and that the princes who reign in those distant parts would welcome the opening of communication with them.

The original of the Toscanelli letter, in Latin, was found in 1860, in the Colombian Library at Seville, in the fly-leaf of a book which had belonged to Columbus, entitled, "Historia rerum ubique gestarum," by Æneas Silvius. Previously it had only been known in the Spanish translation of Las Casas, and in the Italian of Ulloa. The map is unhappily lost.

The letters from Toscanelli made a deep impression on Columbus, and confirmed him in the ideas he had

RETRATO DE LAS CASAS

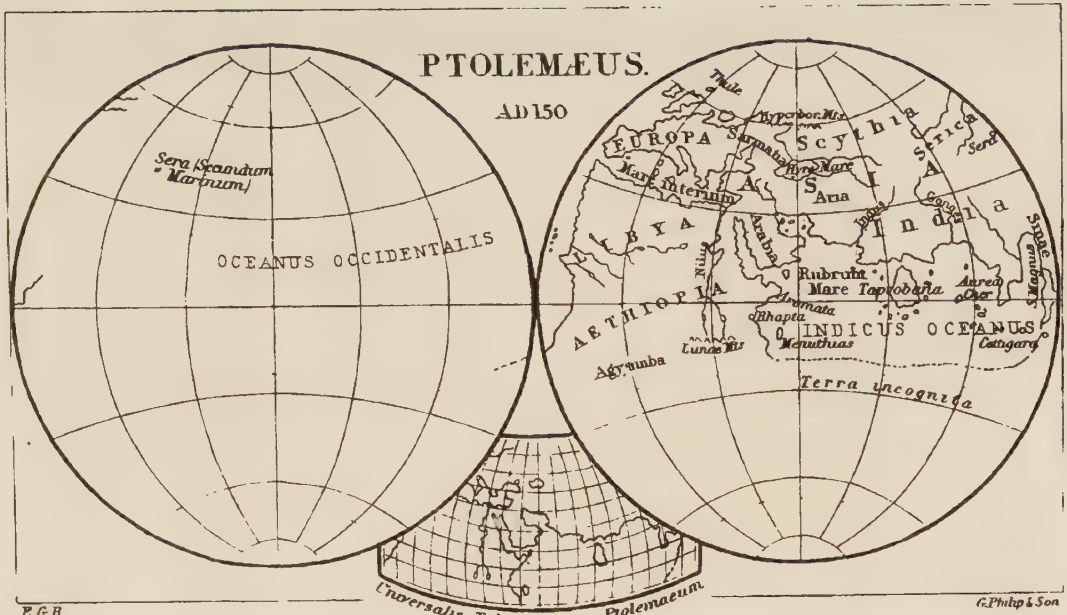
formed from a detailed examination of charts and books, and from an investigation of the geographical bearings of the question But his studies did not interrupt those voyages by means of which he sought to increase his knowledge of maritime affairs. It is certain that he visited the Cape Verde Islands and Sierra Leone. We also know that he was at San Giorgio da Mina, the most remote settlement on the Guinea coast. He could not have been there before 1482, as in that year the settlement was first founded by order of King João II. It seems probable that he actually accompanied the expedition which sailed in December 1481, under the command of Diogo d'Azambuja. It consisted of nine caravels, and two merchant ships with stores and building materials Arriving in January 1482. the troops were landed, and the fort of La Mina was immediately commenced. In twenty days the walls and tower were completed, and the fort was dedicated to St. George This settlement was very successful, and considerable sums of gold were annually collected and sent to Portugal. On his return from the coast of Guinea, Columbus resolved to submit his matured scheme to João II, King of Portugal, and to propose to him the despatch of an expedition westward.

The arguments he put forward were explained long afterwards by his son Fernando, in an essay which was inserted by Las Casas in his History of the Indies. The first argument was that as all the earth and water in the world constitutes a sphere, and is consequently round, according to the opinions of several philosophical authorities, it was possible to go round it until men on one side stood foot to foot with those on the other. The second argument was that, as the greater part of

Pg-34

this globe has been navigated and travelled over, the whole was now discovered except the space between the eastern end of India, of which Ptolemy* and Marinus had notices, and the isles of Cape Verde and the Azores. The third argument dealt with the distance. Columbus maintained that the unnavigated portion could not be more than a third of the whole circumference. For Marinus had described fifteen hours out of the twenty-four in the eastern parts; but as he did not commence his description so far west as the Cape Verdes, there could not be more than eight hours between those islands and India. His fourth argument was a continuation of the third. He urged that Marinus had not included the most eastern part of the lands of India in his fifteen hours, and that, therefore, the distance was even less than eight hours from Portugal westward to the Indies, which might easily be sailed across in a short time. He fortified this last argument by the testimony of Ctesias in Strabo, of Nearchus, and Pliny, respecting the vast extent of Asia. He relied also on the authority of the learned Arab astronomer Alfraganus, who held the length of a degree to be not more than $56\frac{2}{3}$ miles, which was his fifth argument. This was the origin of the cardinal error of Columbus respecting the earth's circumference; and his conclusions may have been unconsciously influenced by the wish to shorten the distance. The early Greek astronomers rather exaggerated the true circumference, and Ptolemy was not very far from the truth. But the later Arab writers, including Alfraganus, held the circumference of the earth to be only 20,400 miles, which would give 56 miles to a degree. According to Abulfeda this con-

* See Plate for Ptolemy's map


PTOLEMÆUS.
AD 150
Thule
EUROPA
Sarmatia
Scythia
Serica
Serae
Mare Internum
ASIA
Asia
India
Ganges
Indus
Sinae
Magnus
LIBYA
Nilus
Arabia
Rubrum Mare
Taprobana
Aurea Chersonesus
Ethiopia
Ptolemaïs
Thapta
INDICUS OCEANUS
Cattigara
Agysimba
Lunae Mts
Menuthias
Terra incognita
Sera (Scandum Marinum)
OCEANUS OCCIDENTALIS
Universalis Tabula juxta Ptolemaeum
E G R.
G. Philip & Son

19-35

clusion is derived from the careful measurement of a degree on the plain of Lingar, by order of the Khalifah Almamun, in about A.D. 800. It was adopted by Columbus, and was the main cause of the error in his calculations.

The principal arguments were carefully drawn up by Columbus, and submitted to João II., who referred the question for decision to Dr. Diogo Ortiz Castellano, Bishop of Ceuta, Dr. Calzadilla, Bishop of Viseu, and the two physicians, Rodrigo and Joseph the Jew, who had been joined with Behaim in his work connected with the adaptation of the astrolabe. They unanimously reported against Columbus, and his proposal was rejected. The Bishop of Ceuta, however, advised that the illustrious Genoese should be amused with negotiations, while a caravel was secretly despatched to test the correctness of his arguments. She encountered a gale and gave up the attempt, returning to report that the voyage was impossible. This treachery came to the ears of Columbus, and he resolved to break off all correspondence with the Portuguese Government, and to seek for sympathy and countenance elsewhere.

Columbus, alike in his voyages and his studies, had been wrapped up in the work of maturing his great idea. He had the two gifts which constitute genius, a vivid and brilliant imagination and the power of taking trouble. But gain was indifferent to him. He was as poor when he left Portugal in 1484 as when he arrived in 1474. Indeed he was poorer, for he had contracted debts to some of his countrymen at Lisbon, debts which were all honourably paid in after years. His wife had died, and was buried in the chapel of Piedad, a place of interment exclusively reserved for the Moniz family. Columbus

HIS SISTER-IN-LAW CARED FOR HIS SON, DIEGO.

was left with his little son Diego.[3] He resolved to turn his steps to Spain, and begin the whole labour of persuasion over again, with the same ardour and enthusiasm. His wife's sister, Violante, or Brigulaga, was married to a certain inhabitant of Huelva named Don Miguel Muliarte. He would place Diego in safe keeping with his aunt while he went forth to renew his battle with the world. Leaving his affairs at Lisbon in charge of his faithful friend and brother Bartolomé, he set out on the long journey with his little son, penniless and on foot. He was about to present the priceless gift of his genius and his discovery to the crowns of Castille and Leon.

NOTES

[3] *The Marriage of Columbus in Portugal, and the Fables based on it.*

There is much confusion in the reference to the marriage of Columbus by his son, Fernando Columbus, as quoted in the "Historie" and by Las Casas. They say that Filippa Moniz was a daughter of Bartolomé Moniz Perestrelo, who was then dead, and that Columbus went to live with his mother-in-law who furnished him with charts and other sources of information from the effects of her late husband. Diego the son and heir of Columbus, also told Las Casas some further particulars, which he wrote down from memory many years afterwards. These were that Columbus inherited property in Porto Santo and went there to live with his wife, and that as Madeira and Porto Santo were places to which all the Portuguese discovery ships resorted, he thus collected much information.

In the will of Diego his mother is called Moniz only, and the name Perestrelo is not mentioned. Fernando Columbus had a confused idea about the Perestrelo relationship, taking the wife of Perestrelo to be the mother, whereas she was the aunt of the wife of Columbus. Fructuoso and the Portuguese

Pg-37

genealogists, tell us that Bartolomé Perestrelo had an only child by Isabel Moniz named Bartolomé, and that, far from living at Porto Santo, she gave up her rights and left the island thirty years before the marriage of Columbus. This is strong evidence against the wife of Columbus having been a daughter of Bartolomé Perestrelo, and in favour of her Moniz parentage Filippa, the wife of Columbus, was buried in the chapel of Piedad, a place of interment reserved exclusively for the Moniz family. She could not have been buried there if she had been a Perestrelo With the assumed Perestrelo connection all the stories about the inheritance and the residence at Porto Santo fall to the ground, together with a growth of fable that had gathered round them. The memory of Las Casas, taxed to record events of which he had been told many years before, no doubt played him false. The fable, first noticed by Oviedo as a rumour without foundation, that a pilot had been driven across the ocean to an island of the new world, who gave Columbus the information that enabled him to make the voyage, rests on the other fable that he lived at Porto Santo or Madeira. Gomara copied the story from Oviedo, omitting the important fact that Oviedo believed it to be false He asserts that the pilot died at the house of Columbus in Madeira, leaving him a chart, a journal, and observations. As soon as the pilot and his companions were dead, Columbus proposed to go in search of the land they had discovered, but concealed the source of his information. If Columbus was silent, how, it may be asked, did Gomara obtain his information, if not from his own inventive brain? For Oviedo only alluded to the story as a rumour, while Gomara states it as a fact Gomara, however, admits that the name of the pilot was unknown Acosta and Mariana refer to the story, but without the name of the pilot Acosta indeed remarks that the name continued unknown in order that God might have all the honour. Benzoni alluded to the tale as an envious fabrication of Gomara. Garcilasso de la Vega, writing 120 years after the event, gives the most circumstantial version Such fables usually grow and thrive as the distance from the time increases Garcilasso even gives the name of the pilot, which was unknown to all the contemporaries and to all writers of the next generation. According to him it was Alonzo Sanchez of Huelva Invented to detract from the merit of Columbus, the fable took shape under the

Pg-38

envious hand of Gomara, and grew until the anonymous pilot received a name more than a century afterwards It is inexpressibly the most absurd tale that got into circulation among the detractors of the great Genoese, and the most unworthy It may safely be assumed that no such person as Alonzo Sanchez ever existed, although a modern street has been named after him at Huelva

(3) *The Compass*

Two passages relating to the introduction of the use of the compass by Flavio Gioja have been quoted from Antonio Beccadelli surnamed "Il Panormita" (1374–1471), who was a Latin versifier, and author of a life of Alfonso of Aragon One of these passages is given by Henricus Brenemannus in his *Dissertatio de Republica Amalphitana*, and is to the following effect "Prima dedit nautis usum magnetis Amalphis" The other is cited by Klaproth "Inventrix praclara fuit magnetis Amalphis." But Mr Major says that he has sought through the pages of Beccadelli for these passages in vain ("Prince Henry," p 59, *n*)

(4) *Mention of Wife and Children by Columbus*

In one of his letters, Columbus makes use of the following expression "*Yo dexe muger y fijos que jamas vi, por ello*"—"I left wife and children whom I never saw, for it," *i e*, for this service This might be interpreted that he had at least two children besides Diego and that they and his wife were not dead when he left Lisbon, but died in his absence There is, however, a more probable explanation He may allude to a second wife, namely, to Beatriz Enriquez and to his two sons, Diego and Fernando, whom he never, or scarcely ever, saw owing to his long absences He does not say that he never saw them *again* He uses the word *jamas* (never), but his knowledge of Spanish was imperfect, at least not that of a native, and he probably intended to say, hardly ever

P9-39

IN SPAIN
"FRIAR" TRANSLATES TO "FRAY" IN SPANISH.

CHAPTER III.

FRANCISCAN MONASTERY OF SANTA MARIA DE LA RABIDA

COLUMBUS IN SPAIN

HALF way between the Guadalquivir and the Guadiana there is an estuary formed by the two rivers Odiel and Tinto, which drain the Andalusian province of Huelva The town of Huelva is on the Odiel, Moguer and the port of Palos on the Tinto On the promontory to the east of the Tinto rose the old Franciscan monastery of Santa Maria de la Rabida. It was an irregularly-built pile, with no architectural pretensions, consisting of two cloisters with upper stories, a refectory, and a small church. But it is a conspicuous landmark out at sea, and is in a commanding position The rocky promontory on which it stands is half-covered with a gloomy pine forest and a few cypress trees appeared over the wall of the convent garden

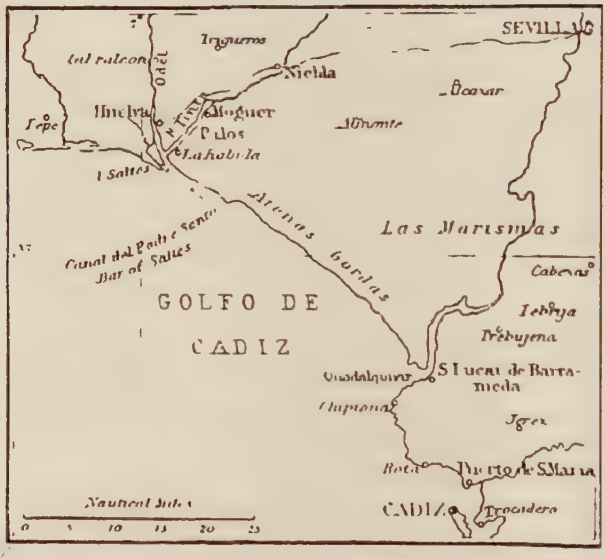
1485

On an evening of January 1485 a wayfarer was seated at the foot of the stone cross in front of the convent gate, which is still preserved, and a little boy rested on his knee. Columbus had toiled across the mountains of Aracena, and down the valley of the Rio Tinto, only to find that the Muliartes were not known at Palos. They appear to have moved to Seville Without friends or resources, Columbus wandered up the sandy road from Palos to the lonely convent of La Rabida, sometimes leading the child by the hand sometimes carrying him

NO FRIENDS

P9-46
HE AND SON
1485

. in his arms After resting for a little while on the steps of the cross, he rang the convent bell, and asked for a glass of water and a little bread for his son. When the doors were thrown open the monks were struck by the noble presence of the wayfarer, and invited him to bring the child into the convent Among



MAP FROM HUELVA TO CADIZ

the brotherhood there was a young monk named Fray Antonio de Marchena, who took a special interest in the stranger, and entered into conversation with him Columbus afterwards spoke of this newly-found friend in most grateful terms He was induced, by the kindly interest the young monk took in his affairs, and the unusual knowledge he displayed of astronomy and kindred

sciences, to explain to him the great project of the western voyage Marchena listened with the closest attention, fully accepted the conclusions of Columbus, and entered warmly into all his hopes and aspirations. "He alone," declared the great discoverer in after years, "never treated my ideas with ridicule" Marchena even appears to have imparted a higher tone to his aspirations, and to have filled his mind with the grand thought of conveying Christianity across the ocean, and of saving millions from perdition Henceforward this religious aspect of the enterprise ever held a leading place in the mind of Columbus.

The brotherhood of La Rabida gladly took charge of little Diego until other arrangements could be made for him, and the father, relieved of anxiety for his child, prepared to face the ridicule and contempt of the world, and to urge his scheme on the acceptance of the Spanish authorities. But he first had to find the means of earning his daily bread

Taking a hopeful farewell of his little son, and of the kind-hearted monks of La Rabida, Columbus set out for the city of Seville. Assuming a Spanish form for his name, he henceforward called himself Cristoval Colon. We are told by Father Bernaldez * that Columbus got a living at Seville by the sale of printed books. But he soon formed the acquaintance of men of learning, such as his countrymen Antonio and Alessandro Geraldini They probably obtained for him an introduction to the Count of Medina Celi, one of the greatest noblemen of Spain

The founder of the house of Medina Celi was a gallant knight who came to the help of Henry of Trastamara

* *Historia de los Reyes Catolicos*, cap cxiii

with 250 lances, and was rewarded with the title of Medina Celi in 1371, and with the hand of the Princess Isabella de la Cerda. The fifth Count of Medina Celi * was Don Luis de la Cerda, whose mother was a Mendoza, and heiress of Cogolludo, and whose wife was a princess of Aragon. He entertained the illustrious Genoese with generous hospitality at his lordship of the port of Santa Maria, near Cadiz, and warmly encouraged him in his project. Indeed, this enlightened nobleman was ready to fit out an expedition himself; but he considered that so great an enterprise ought not to be undertaken by a subject. He therefore resolved to introduce Columbus to persons at court who could procure for him an interview with the Queen, and an opportunity of explaining his scheme to their Catholic majesties. When Columbus returned after his first voyage, the Duke of Medina Celi wrote to the Cardinal Mendoza, his uncle, on the 19th of March 1493, explaining the part he had taken in befriending the Admiral at a time when he most needed friends. He said that he entertained Columbus for a long time in his house when he first came from Portugal, and when he was meditating an appeal to the King of France. The Duke wished to undertake the enterprise himself, despatching Columbus from the port of Santa Maria with three or four caravels. But he felt that such a business was one for the Queen, and not for him. He therefore wrote to her from Rota, a little town at the north entrance of the bay of Cadiz, submitting the matter for her judgment, but offering to take part in it. She replied that she wished Columbus to be sent to court, where he was to be placed in charge of Alonzo de Quin-

* The Dukedom of Medina Celi was not created until December 1491.

tanilla. In another communication she caused the Count of Medina Celi to be informed that she did not look upon the matter as very certain, but that if anything came of it he should take part in the enterprise

This was the occasion of the first arrival of Columbus at the court, which was then at Cordova, and of his presentation to Queen Isabella in the spring of 1486. The Queen was in the meridian of her life and of her reign when she first met the great seaman with whom she was destined to share the glory of the discovery of the new world. There can be no doubt that she was a woman of more than ordinary cleverness and force of character She had passed through a long period in her brother's lifetime during which she had been exposed to extraordinary risks and dangers. She had avoided the one and overcome the others by the exercise of her own judgment, frequently acting against the advice of her councillors. She had not only maintained her position, but had dethroned her own niece, and had ascended the throne of Castille with the consent of the people. Her sole right was the will of the nation expressed by its representatives in Cortes. Her marriage with her cousin of Aragon was another serious risk, and their married life reflects great credit on the judgment and wisdom both of Ferdinand and Isabella Their positions were most difficult, yet they succeeded in making the arrangement work harmoniously and without friction throughout their married lives Isabella took for her share of the work the civil administration of Castille, and the provision of men and supplies in time of war She conducted these affairs with remarkable ability In her war with Portugal, from 1475 to 1479, she was completely successful; and since 1481 the joint sove-

reigns had been engaged in successive campaigns against the Moors in Granada, which were only to close with the expulsion of the Muslim from the Peninsula. In 1486 Isabella was in her thirty-seventh year, and she had been twelve years on the throne. Her descent was not wholly Spanish. Her grandmother on her father's side, and her great-grandmother on her mother's side, were Englishwomen. Hence she inherited a fair complexion, auburn hair, and blue eyes. She was above the middle height, with a countenance full of animation and intelligence, and an impulsive disposition kept under control by the long practice of self-restraint.

Columbus, when he arrived at Cordova, was at once befriended by Alonzo de Quintanilla, a knight of an ancient family in Asturias, who held the high official post of Minister of Finance for the kingdom of Castille. Quintanilla relieved the Genoese stranger's needs, and supplied him with meals from his own table. He also introduced him to the Archbishop of Toledo, the great Cardinal Mendoza, under whose powerful auspices an interview with the Queen was arranged.

Isabella liked the illustrious Genoese from the first time they met. His candour and obvious sincerity, his earnestness, and the interesting character of his conversation touched her heart while it riveted her attention. She at once decided that his extraordinary project at least deserved careful investigation. The sovereigns ordered that a committee, presided over by the Queen's confessor, Fray Hernando de Talavera, the Prior of the monastery of Santa Maria del Prado, near Valladolid, should examine and report upon the arguments of Columbus. The sittings of the committee were held at Cordova, while Ferdinand and Isabella were occupied

with the Moorish campaign, which in that summer comprised the siege of Loja.

The Prior of Prado was a man whose virtues had raised him from the humblest condition He was an ecclesiastic of exemplary piety and the strictest probity, and had acquired great influence over the Queen In any matter relating to the doctrine and discipline of the Church his judgment was sound, and his advice was always sure to be honest; but he was about as fit to give an opinion on the arguments of Columbus as the mule on which he rode He was learned, pious, and amiable; and in after years, when he became Archbishop of Granada, he endeavoured to convert the Moors by argument and exhortation rather than by violence. He had read many a tome full of theological lore, but his narrow mind could not comprehend the novel ideas, so far outside the sphere of his thoughts, on which he was to sit in judgment They would seem to him no better than the ravings of a madman Dr Rodrigo Maldonado, of the royal council, and other learned persons, including some versed in marine affairs, were joined with Talavera, but they could not enlighten him, and it was a case of the blind leading the blind.

Talavera's committee reported against Columbus. His arguments, they thought, were absurd in themselves, and were unsupported by any high authority. They were at variance with the expressed views of some of the Fathers of the Church, and the good Prior was not quite sure whether some of them had not a taint of heresy Columbus was bitterly disappointed He paced the streets of Cordova absorbed in thought, finding sympathy from very few, and exposed to the ridicule of the crowd, who thought he was mad. Boys in the

streets ran after him, with their fingers pointed to their foreheads

In this time of sadness and depression he found a most valued friend. Diego de Deza was Prior of the Dominican convent of San Estevan at Salamanca, Professor of Theology in the University, and tutor to Prince Juan. He was a man of the world, and was struck by the earnestness and intelligence of the Genoese, to whom he took a great liking. He resolved to befriend him, and he shrewdly foresaw that the most effectual way of doing so would be by affording opportunities of discussing the questions raised by the stranger, and of thus ventilating them and making them known to men who were more capable of forming a judgment than Talavera and his colleagues. Ferdinand and Isabella had been called into Galicia to suppress a disturbance raised by the Count of Lemos, and they intended to pass the winter of 1486–87 at Salamanca. Deza arranged that Columbus should also pass the winter at Salamanca. At that time the famous Spanish university was an important centre of learning. With its walls overlooking the river Tormes, a tributary of the Douro, its ancient bridge of many arches, and its numerous towers, the Spanish Oxford is a grand place even in its decay. The colleges and convents clustered round the solid romanesque cathedral of the twelfth century, with its beautiful central dome. The later renaissance cathedral by its side had not then been begun. The cloister on the south side was the place where the schools were held until the fifteenth century, and on one side of it is the ancient chapter-house. Within a very short walk from the cathedral was the convent of San Estevan with its richly-ornamented façade and great hall of "De Pro-

947

fundis," while other conventual and collegiate buildings gave an academical tone to the old city, thronged as it then was with professors and students The professorial chairs were not devoted exclusively to theology and other priestly learning Mathematics, physics, natural philosophy, and astronomy were also studied, nor were Strabo, Pliny, and Ptolemy exclusively taught. The works of Alfraganus and Regiomontanus were included in the course, and Pedro Ciruelo, a graduate of Salamanca, had written a commentary on the *Sphæra Mundi* of Sacrobosco Aguilera, another graduate, had composed a work on the astrolabe. So that Columbus was coming to a place where his reasoning would have some chance of being appreciated

The Prior of San Estevan determined not to lodge his guest within the city, but in a country farm or grange called Valcuebo, which belonged to the Dominicans, and was at a short distance from the walls It is described as having been situated on a slight eminence, surrounded by pretty rural scenery, and as well adapted for study and meditation * Hither the Dominican brethren came to converse with their guest on the great deductions he had drawn from a study of scientific books, and on the reconciliation of his views with orthodox theology Sometimes the monks were accompanied in their walks to Valcuebo by learned professors, and even by persons of distinction attached to the court Later in the winter Deza and his monks received company in the hall of their convent, called "De Profundis," when Columbus would come into the city and hold conferences with men of learning, at which numerous courtiers were present. These assemblages for discussion, sometimes in the quiet

* Ascnsio, i. p. 117

29-48

shades of Valcuebo, at others in the great hall of the convent, excited much interest both among the students and at court. The kindly object of Deza was secured. The question was thoroughly ventilated, and even those who withheld their assent admitted that it was a fitting subject for discussion. Ferdinand and Isabella left Salamanca for Cordova on the 29th of January 1487, and by that time Columbus could count among his friends and advocates the Cardinal Mendoza, the Count of Tendilla; Alonzo Quintanilla the treasurer of Castille, Luis Santangel who held the same office in Aragon; Gabriel Sanchez, the King's Treasurer, Diego Deza, the Prior of San Estevan, Don Andres Cabrera, and, perhaps most important of all, his wife, Beatriz Fernandez de Bobadilla, the Marquesa de Moya, and the Queen's oldest and dearest friend. Thus it was that accounts of the conferences held in the convent of San Estevan reached the ears of the King and Queen, and when they left Salamanca the ill effects of the report of Talavera were quite removed from their minds. Columbus followed the court to Cordova in March 1487, having during the winter made a great step towards the fulfilment of his aspirations. Thanks were chiefly due to the unfailing kindness and sagacious management of Diego Deza, the future Bishop of Palencia and Archbishop of Seville. It is difficult to realise that this very man was also the successor of Torquemada as Grand Inquisitor of Spain. We, however, need only know him as the generous and enlightened friend of the great Genoese. When this peaceful oasis in his stormy life came to an end, Columbus must have felt regret at leaving his quiet home at Valcuebo. The humble grange still stands at a distance of about three miles to the westward of Salamanca.

The country people have a tradition that, on the crest of a small hill near the house, now called "Tero de Colon," the future discoverer used to pass long hours conferring with his visitors or reading the Holy Scriptures in solitude. The present proprietor, Don Martin de Solis, has erected a monument on this site, consisting of a stone pyramid rising from a masonry substructure, and surmounted by a globe.

In the spring of 1487 Ferdinand commenced the siege of Malaga, while the Queen remained at Cordova to superintend the transmission of stores and provisions to the army. She had not forgotten Columbus, but caused it to be intimated to him that, as soon as the exigencies of the public service permitted it, she would give detailed attention to his representations. Meanwhile he was to consider himself to be attached to her court, and he received a payment of 3000 maravedis * on May 5th, and a similar sum on July 3rd. He was ordered to join the camp, and was present at the surrender of Malaga on the 18th of August. In October he received a third royal donation of 4000 maravedis But no further progress was made. The sovereigns went to pass the winter at Zaragoza, and Columbus was left inactive at Cordova, where he found some consolation for his numerous disappointments and his long and weary waiting.

The noble family of Arana was established in the city of the Khalifahs, but, although of ancient lineage and highly connected, its members were not rich in this

* 34 maravedis = 1 real.
8 reals = 1 duro (dollar), 1 ounce of silver 4s. 6d.).
490 maravedis = 1 castellano (of gold)
393 maravedis = 1 ducado

world's goods Columbus was hospitably received in the house of the Aranas at Cordova, having probably brought introductions to them when he first arrived from Seville in 1486. They were delighted with their guest, were interested in his story, and the male members of the family formed for him a lasting friendship. Diego de Arana was one of the officers in his first voyage, and Don Pedro commanded a ship in the third Another member of the family was a beautiful sister of Don Pedro, named Beatriz Her sympathies were at once excited by the history of the illustrious Genoese. She conceived a passion for the great man, who was many years older than herself; she keenly felt his disappointments, and had an enthusiastic belief in his genius. When the disheartening judgment of the Prior of Prado became known, she animated her lover in his despondency, sustained his drooping spirits by words of comfort and hope, and at length aroused a corresponding feeling in his heart. During the whole winter of 1487–88 they were thrown together, and in the course of the long months she consoled and encouraged him, and was his constant companion It is still a disputed point whether the love of Columbus and Beatriz was ever sanctioned by the benediction of the Church (1) On the 15th of August 1488 a son was born, and named Fernando. There was a difference of ten years between the ages of the two sons; but Diego, who had probably been entrusted to the Muliartes at Seville, now found a second mother in Beatriz at Cordova, and remained there until he became a royal page in 1492.

The patience of Columbus was nearly exhausted. Year after year slipped away. He had found many kind and sympathising friends, but no progress was made. He

began to think that his sole reliance must not be on Spain, and that if his great aspirations were ever to be fulfilled it behoved him to seek aid elsewhere. We have no exact information, but it seems probable that his brother Bartolomè had remained at Lisbon If so, Columbus would naturally turn to him for counsel in his difficulties. This would explain the reason for his having obtained a safe conduct from the King of Portugal, dated at Avis on the 20th of March 1488, which is otherwise inexplicable Early in the autumn of 1488, after the birth of Fernando, the two brothers conferred together at Lisbon It is probable that Cristoforo made a final overture to the King of Portugal at this time; for, in one of his letters, he speaks of having urged the matter on that sovereign's attention for fourteen years—that would be from 1474 to 1488 * Cristoforo had made so many powerful friends in Spain, and the Queen had shown such favour to him on several occasions, that it was decided to be unwise to abandon all hope from that source. Cristoforo was therefore to return to Spain, while Bartolomè proceeded to London, and endeavoured to induce the King of England to undertake the project. Failing him, similar help was to be solicited from the Regent of France

Bartolomè Columbus is described by Las Casas as a man of great valour, combined with prudence, more astute, and not so simple-minded as his brother Cristoforo. He was experienced in the affairs of the sea, and he had studied cosmography, and acquired the art of a draughtsman The two brothers read and worked together. Bartolomè had less genius and more worldly wisdom than Cristoforo. He embarked for England

* Letter to King Ferdinand, May 1505 Navarrete, iii. p 526

but his ship was captured by Easterling pirates, and he was detained for weeks and reduced to great poverty. At length he reached London, where he prepared a *mappe-monde* with the intention of presenting it, when he should obtain an audience of King Henry VII. It was accompanied by a copy of Latin verses, also said to have been composed by Bartolomè, for it is signed by "the Genoese named Bartholomeus Columbus de Terrarossa who executed this work in London on the 10th of February 1489." Oviedo* tells us that Henry ridiculed all that Columbus said, and looked upon his words as foolish. This is exactly what might be expected from that shrewd and clever, but narrow-minded and unimaginative usurper. Bartolomè consequently left England, and endeavoured to secure his brother's interests at the court of Anne of Beaujeu,† who then governed France for her young brother Charles VIII. There he remained until he was summoned to Spain in 1493.

Cristofolo was still at Lisbon in December 1488, for he saw the return of the expedition of Bartolomeu Diaz in that month from the discovery of the Cape of Good Hope, and witnessed the reception of Diaz by the King of Portugal. He referred to these events in a marginal note in his copy of the *Imago Mundi* by Pierre d'Ailly (?). The note concludes with these words "in quibus omnibus interfui," referring to the arrival of Diaz and his presentation to the King. But he appears to have returned to Spain soon afterwards, and to have been at Cordova again, in the spring of 1489. For an order was given by the Queen on the 12th of May that Columbus should receive board and lodging

* Lib. i. cap. iv. i. p. 19.
† Harrisse, "Colomb," ii. p. 194.

in the towns through which he passed in his journeys. In the same month Ferdinand revived the war against the Moors, and began the siege of Baza; a difficult and tedious operation, involving much hard fighting. Columbus served in the besieging army, but the place did not surrender until December.

Early in 1490 the court arrived at Seville, where the sovereigns took up their residence for several months. But Columbus failed to obtain attention to his plans. The Queen was busily engaged in making arrangements for the marriage of her daughter Isabella with Affonso, the son of João II. of Portugal, and could attend to nothing else. Then followed festivities and tournaments which lasted until May. Columbus not only continued to retain the friends he had made at Salamanca, but he had secured many more. Nevertheless, he could not obtain another interview with the Queen. In November she bade farewell to her daughter, and at the opening of 1491 nothing was heard of but preparations for the siege of Granada. At length the patience of Columbus was exhausted. Years had been wasted in Spain, and he seemed to be no nearer the goal of his wishes than when he crossed the frontier. He resolved to join his brother in France, and quitted the court of Seville without communicating his intention to a soul. But he would first bid farewell to his warm hearted friends in the convent of La Rabida. Sadly and wearily he set out on the road to Huelva, and he rang the convent bell with a feeling of despondency, almost of despair. His young son Diego was again his companion. It was nearly seven years since he left those gates, buoyant with hope, and confident that his great destiny would be fulfilled. He stood before them

Pg-54

MAJOR ASSISTANCE CAME FROM

again with all his hopes crushed, and his plans frustrated —almost broken-hearted.

La Rabida proved the turning-point of his life story Here lived the men who had been true to him, through good report and evil report, who had never doubted him, never ridiculed his idea He found Fray Antonio de Marchena as full of enthusiasm as ever, and refusing to entertain the idea of failure Hope revived as the weary traveller crossed the threshold The aged Guardian of the convent, Fray Juan Perez, was as cordial as the younger monk, and, moreover, he had the power as well as the will to help Perez had been an accountant of the royal revenues in his youth, and, before he retired to La Rabida, he had preceded Talavera in the important and confidential post of confessor to the Queen The conversations of Marchena had impressed him very favourably, and he was strongly inclined to give Columbus his cordial support. But before finally deciding, he resolved to give the extraordinary proposal of the great Genoese his full consideration. He therefore summoned to his counsels a learned physician of Palos, named Dr. Garci Hernandez (1)

There was a very full discussion of all the arguments put forward by Columbus, and the old Guardian was convinced of the correctness of the calculations, and of the vast importance of the proposed enterprise Perez resolved to write a letter to his old friend Queen Isabella, in which he urged her, in the strongest possible terms, not to abandon the grand project by which not only her kingdom would be aggrandised but her God would be served, through the agency of the learned stranger who was about to leave the country, but whom he detained at La Rabida until her answer arrived

COLUMBUS WAS STAYING AT LA RABIDA ETC...

The letter was entrusted to a pilot of the little port of Lepe, to the west of Palos, named Sebastian Rodriguez Ferdinand and Isabella were besieging Granada, and they were so resolved never to raise the siege until the Moors surrendered that they had converted their camp into a town, which was named Santa Fè. Rodriguez did not let the grass grow under his feet. He returned with a reply from the Queen within fourteen days of his leaving La Rabida

Isabella ordered her old confessor, Juan Perez, to come to her at once. The Guardian lost no time. He borrowed a mule from one Juan Rodriguez Cabezudo of Moguer, and set out alone that very night, without regard either for the difficulties of the road or the rigours of the season. The Queen had never forgotten the favourable impression made upon her by Columbus, and his numerous friends at court had kept his project in her mind. It really only needed a strong stimulus, such as was supplied by the impressive letter of her old confessor, to re-awaken her interest, even when engaged in such absorbing work as the final destruction of Muslim power in Spain. The presence and persuasions of Juan Perez clinched the matter. Columbus had not long to wait for the result of his friend's mission. In a few days Diego Prieto, one of the chief magistrates of Palos, rode up to the convent door He brought orders from the Queen that Columbus was to proceed at once to Santa Fè, and a sum of money, 20,000 maravedis in florins, with which he was to buy a mule and a suitable outfit to enable him to appear at court. There was also a letter from Perez to the physician Garci Hernandez, and another to Columbus, which was as follows —

"Our Lord has listened to the prayers of His servant The wise and virtuous Isabella, touched by the grace of heaven, gave a favourable hearing to the words of this poor monk. All has turned out well Far from despising your project, she has adopted it from this time and she has summoned you to court to propose the means which seem best to you for the execution of the designs of Providence My heart swims in a sea of comfort, and my spirit leaps with joy in the Lord Start at once, for the Queen waits for you, and I much more than she. Commend me to the prayers of my brethren, and of your little Diego The grace of God be with you, and may our Lady of La Rabida accompany you.'

On the arrival of Columbus at Santa Fé he found that Perez and his other friends had been very active, and he had several encouraging interviews with the Queen. He learnt from her that she was determined to undertake the enterprise, and she was not deterred by the concessions he demanded They must have appeared enormous to ordinary men when coming from a poor stranger. But they represented, from the point of view of Columbus, the greatness and importance of the enterprise, and he firmly refused to abate them Satisfied with the assurances of Isabella, he readily consented to the reasonable delay rendered necessary by the exigencies of the siege, and he himself took part in the various combats outside the walls, giving proofs of the valour which was the accompaniment of his prudence and of his lofty aspirations At last Granada fell on the 2nd of January 1492

The concessions demanded by Columbus then came before the royal council and their acceptance was strongly opposed by Talavera and others, who looked upon such demands from a penniless adventurer as extravagant, and indeed preposterous. They reported that

it was impossible for the Crown to surrender prerogatives and rights of such importance in perpetuity. Columbus could not be induced to recede from his position. When he was informed of the decision, he mounted his mule and left Granada by the Cordova road, intending to join his brother, and submit his project for the acceptance of the King of France.

This famous act in the life of Columbus needs careful study. To the Talaveras of all time there only appears an arrogant adventurer, without modesty or moderation, who was making extravagant demands for his own personal advantage in payment of services the value of which he presumptuously exaggerated, and which he had not performed. But to the careful historian, who tries to gauge the motives which actuate great men in critical moments of their lives, this is a superficial and an erroneous view. Columbus had been working with untiring enthusiasm for many years to secure the realisation of his ideas. His studies and his experience taught him that those ideas were based on solid facts. He knew that his project would lead to results of supreme importance affecting the whole world. He not only did not exaggerate those results, but his measurement of them fell far short of the truth. He knew that they would be great, but he did not know how great. He had faced ridicule, poverty, and hardships for the sake of his grand convictions, and he was ready to do so again. Poverty or riches were nothing to him, and could be nothing. But he saw, with the unerring prevision of genius, that the enterprise must be undertaken with a full acknowledgment of its supreme importance. The government or the sovereign that refused so to recognise its significance was unworthy

Pg-58

to undertake it. The privileges and the dignities he demanded were not for himself but for the achievement he represented: and that achievement would not be worthily done, if it was not done in this spirit. It cannot be doubted that he had pondered the matter long and deeply, and that his conduct in leaving Granada was the result of a resolution taken long before, and from which nothing would divert him. His was the master-mind. He worked for his fellow-men and for his God, and the instrument he used must either be fashioned by his hand, or give place to one of better and truer metal. Some such view as this was, no doubt, the one taken by Columbus. He believed that he was called to a great work by the Divine Will, and that the full recognition of its greatness was incumbent on those who were to assist him. His conduct was not that of an adventurer seeking paltry gain for himself. It was that of a great man destined to be one of the lights of the world, acting from a supreme sense of duty.

The departure of Columbus caused the greatest consternation among all the true friends of their country. The Marquesa de Moya immediately sought an interview with the Queen, and entreated her to recall the great navigator and concede his demands. Her entreaties were seconded by those of Luis de Santangel. Isabella had not thought the demands excessive. This noble woman was able to appreciate the lofty motives of her petitioner, and in some measure to comprehend the workings of his mind. The work, she decided, should be the work of Castille alone. But the great difficulty was to find the means of despatching an expedition. The exhausting war had been a terrible drain on the treasury. When her mind was made up she was re-

solved that no difficulty in raising the funds should form an obstacle. She declared that she would give up her own jewels, but Santangel obviated this sacrifice by finding the needful supplies from another source. To the great joy of his friends, Isabella announced her resolution that the expedition should be despatched, and that the concessions demanded by Columbus should be granted.

A messenger was despatched to recall Columbus. He was overtaken near a bridge called "Pinos," which was celebrated for the many chivalrous feats of arms performed by Moors and Christians round its approaches during the recent war. It is six miles from Granada. He turned his mule's head, rode back to Santa Fè, and immediately had an interview with the Queen. In concert with her husband she gave the necessary orders, and the capitulation, prepared by the secretary, Juan de Coloma, was signed at Santa Fè by their Highnesses on the 17th of April 1492. In return for his discoveries, Columbus was created Admiral of the Ocean in all those islands and continents that he might discover. The title was granted to him for his life, and to his heirs for ever, with the same rights and prerogatives as were enjoyed by the Admiral of Castille. Columbus was also appointed Viceroy and Governor-General of all the lands he might discover. He was also to have a tenth of all the precious metals discovered within the jurisdiction of his Admiralty, and he had the privilege of receiving an eighth part of the profits made by any ship to the equipment of which he had contributed an eighth share. On the 30th Columbus received the grant of his titles, inscribed on parchment, with a leaden seal pendant from silken threads, and signed by the King and Queen. On the

Pg-60

same day the citizens of Palos were ordered to supply the two caravels, which they had been condemned to furnish for the Queen's use without pay during twelve months, as a punishment for certain acts of theirs committed at some former period to the injury of the royal service. Columbus hastened to La Rabida to make preparations for the equipment of his expedition, kissing hands and taking leave of their Highnesses at Granada on the 12th of May 1492.

Beatriz Enriquez ? she was of noble birth

NOTES.

(1) *Question of the Marriage of Beatriz Enriquez*

Some of the biographers of Columbus believe that his intercourse with Beatriz Enriquez was unauthorised by the Church. Others maintain that they were married.

The arguments against the marriage are as follows. It is alleged that there is no mention of a wife in the transactions of the Admiral's life after he left Portugal. In his will he recommended Beatriz to his son Diego not as his wife, but as a person to whom he had been under great obligations, and respecting whom his conscience was burdened, for a reason which he did not think it right to explain. Las Casas said that Columbus "instituted his son Diego his heir-general, and if Diego had no children, then his heir was to be Don Fernando, his natural son" (iii. 194). In a letter dated 1500 Columbus said, "I left my wife and children whom I never saw," and it is assumed that he referred to his Portuguese wife. Also, when he was expecting to be lost in the storm, on his return from his first voyage, he expressed his anguish at leaving his sons orphans "both of father and mother."

On the side of the marriage it is urged that Beatriz was of noble birth, and that an improper connection would have been resented by her family. This was so far from being the case that her male relations continued to be among the Admiral's most steady friends. Her cousin, Diego de Arana, was in the

first voyage of Columbus; and her brother, Pedro de Arana, commanded one of the Admiral's ships in the third voyage. The boy Fernando became a page of the Queen, an honour which would not have been conferred on a bastard. When Columbus wrote, in 1500, "I left my wife and sons for this service, whom I never (*jamas*) saw," he could not have referred to his Portuguese wife, because she only bore him one child. He must have referred to Beatriz Enriquez as his wife, and to his sons Diego and Fernando. So that there is mention of her by the Admiral as his wife. He uses the word *jamas*, which would mean *never* if taken literally, but Columbus, as a foreigner, may well have used the word in the sense of *hardly ever*. The sentence written during the storm that he would leave his sons orphans of father and mother would have been true as regards Diego, but not as regards Fernando. Beatriz was the mother of Fernando whether she was married or not. To imply that Fernando had no mother was a slip of the pen, either on the part of Columbus when writing in a gale of wind, or of Las Casas, who made the abstract from his journal. If Beatriz had not been his wife, he would have charged her own son, Fernando, who was well off, with her maintenance; but he imposed this duty on his eldest son as heir-general, because the maintenance of his widow ought to come out of his entailed estate as Admiral. In his instructions to his son Diego before he sailed on his third voyage, the Admiral charged the young man to look upon Beatriz Enriquez as his mother (Ascensio, i. 105). In his instructions to Diego before he sailed on his last voyage in 1502, he again charged his son to treat Beatriz as his mother. Las Casas did not necessarily use the word "natural" in the sense of illegitimate. In those days it was used for sons of the body, whether illegitimate or not, in contradistinction to sons-in-law or step-sons. Pantaleone Bavarello is officially called "filius *legitimus et naturalis*" in a deed dated in 1517, contemporary with Las Casas.

All the arguments against the marriage are thus disposed of, except the curious wording of the Admiral's will, which is perplexing. The explanation may be that Columbus was married to Beatriz Enriquez, but that some ecclesiastical obstacle subsequently caused the marriage to be dissolved. The obstacle may have been a pre-contract to a person named Enriquez, for the maiden name of Beatriz was Arana. This would explain

Pg-62

everything The Admiral's conscience may have been uneasy because he did not sufficiently assure himself before marriage that no obstacle existed.

(2) *Question respecting the Voyage of Bartolomé Diaz*

The marginal note is on folio 13 of the copy of the *Imago Mundi* in the Columbine Library at Seville, as follows. "Nota quod hoc anno de 88 in mense decembri apulit in ulixbona bartolomeus didacus capitaneus trium caravelarum quem miserat serenissimus rex portugalie in guinea ad tentandum terram et renunciavit ipso serenissimo regi prout navigaverat ultra quam navigatam leuch 600 videlicet 450 ad austrum et 150 ad aquilonem usque uno promontorium per ipsum nominatum cabo de boa esperança quem in agesimba estimamus quodque in eo loco invenit se distare per astrolabium ultra linea equinoctiali gradus 45 quem ultimum locum distat ab ulixbona leuche 3100 quem viagium pietavit et scripsit de leucha in leucha in una carta navigationis ut oculi visui ostenderet ipso serenissimo regi in quibus omnibus interfui"

Las Casas declared that this note was in the handwriting of Bartholomew Columbus, which he knew well, and he therefore assumed that Bartholomew was in the expedition of Diaz. But this is not possible. Diaz returned in December. Bartholomew Columbus finished his great map in London early in the following February This gives little over a month for him to land at Lisbon, embark for England, be captured by pirates, be detained several weeks, find his way to London, and complete the drawing of an elaborate *mappe-monde*. It is impossible

Varnhagen, who was well acquainted with the handwritings, declared that Las Casas was mistaken, and that the marginal note is in the hand of Christopher Columbus Asensio, another expert, came to the same conclusion. It can be proved that Christopher was in Spain during part of the time occupied by the voyage of Diaz But the words "in quibus omnibus interfui" do not imply that the writer was in the voyage with Diaz, but merely that he took part in his reception and was present at his landing. Christopher Columbus was probably in Lisbon at that time. Bartholomew Columbus could not have been there

Pq-63

[3] *The Visits to La Rabida*

The authority for the visits of Columbus to La Rabida, and for the story of his asking for bread and water for his little boy, is Garci Hernandez, the physician of Palos. He gave evidence at the trial instituted, with permission from the Crown, by Diego Columbus to recover the viceroyalty inherited from his father. The evidence reads as if there had only been one visit to La Rabida. This led Mr Harrisse to think that there was only one visit, namely, that in 1491. But the evidence is given as a statement, whereas it was really a series of replies to questions. Closer scrutiny shows that some sentences refer to the first and others to the second visit. One proof that the first visit is also referred to appears in the fact that Hernandez calls young Diego a little child (*niño*). This would be a correct description of him in 1484, but not in 1491. Las Casas mentions the first visit to La Rabida with the child (i. p. 227).

A curious confusion has also arisen between Antonio de Marchena, the monk who received Columbus on his first visit, and the guardian, Juan Perez, who befriended him in 1491. Many authors have mixed them together, and made them into one monk named Perez de Marchena. Marchena was a young monk versed in science, Perez was the aged guardian of the convent. Columbus speaks of them as distinct individuals.

CHAPTER IV.

THE FIRST VOYAGE

Columbus was forty-six years of age when he at length obtained the fulfilment of his life-long aspirations. His hair had become prematurely grey. Naturally quick-tempered, he had subdued this feeling by the practice of self-restraint. He was a man acquainted with adversity, and his countenance wore a somewhat melancholy expression when at rest; but he was eloquent in discourse, engaging and affable with strangers. His magnanimity and inborn courtesy, joined to long intimacy with courts, gave him a noble and dignified bearing. Yet there was still much in common between the enthusiastic young wool-comber of Genoa and the venerated Admiral of the Ocean Sea, the same love of kindred and of home, the same industry and close attention to details, the same kindliness of heart and consideration for comrades.

* During the third week of May, Columbus remained at La Rabida in close consultation with his friends Marchena and Perez, and with the good physician Garci Hernandez. They sat in the courtyard, under the shade of fig-trees, and discussed measures for obtaining ships, and the still more difficult task of obtaining men.

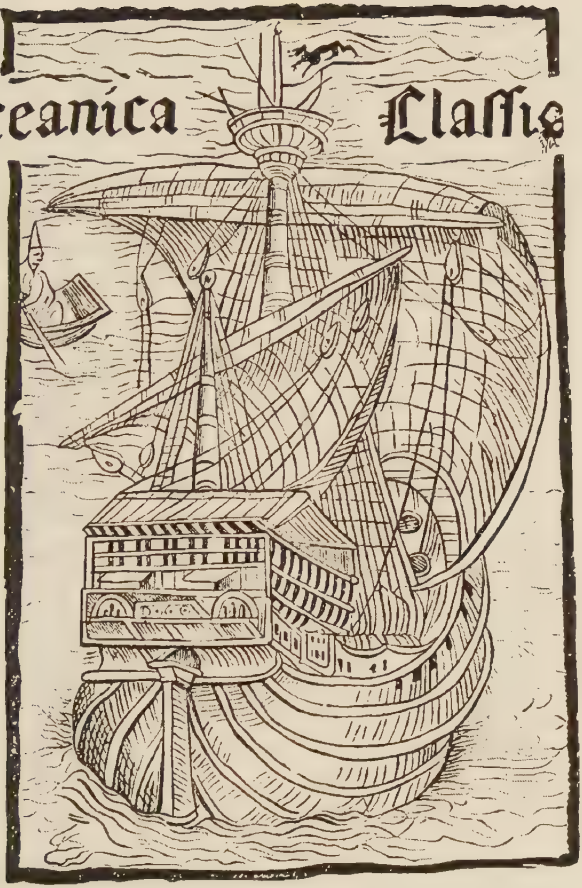
* The little town of Palos lies in a hollow among hills, a quarter of a mile from the right bank of the Rio Tinto. It consists of two streets of humble white-washed houses, and there is a ruin of a large house which once

belonged to the Pinzons. Just above, on the crest of the hill, are the ruins of an old Moorish castle. On Wednesday, the 23rd of May, it was publicly notified in the church of St. George at Palos that the town was to furnish the Admiral with two caravels. This old church, which was originally a mosque, stands on the brow of a hill outside the town, with a view along a little valley to the river The same image of St. George and the Dragon stands over the high altar as was there in the time of Columbus, when the people crowded out of the church on that Wednesday in May. They must find the two caravels in obedience to the royal order, but no man was forced to sail on board of them. This was a mad voyage, sailing away into the mysterious unknown never to be seen again; and as the sailors of Palos and Moguer discussed the matter the terrors of the undertaking seemed to increase, and they became more and more reluctant to ship with Columbus. This difficulty in persuading men to join the expedition was fortunately overcome owing to the Admiral having secured the good will of the most influential family in Palos. ← * *

The Pinzon family was highly esteemed in the district, owing to the enterprise its members had shown in commercial ventures, to their credit and wealth, and to their probity. The three brothers—Martin Alonzo, Vicente Yanez, and Francisco Martin Pinzon—were pilots and shipowners. The guardian of La Rabida, Fray Juan Perez, applied to Martin Alonzo, the elder and most influential of the three. While he appealed to his patriotism, he also stimulated him by the hope of gain, and as soon as he was duly impressed he introduced the pilot to Fray Marchena and Columbus. After a few conferences in the old cloister. Pinzon was convinced

by the eloquence of the Admiral. He and his brothers entered heart and soul into the enterprise. They proved to be excellent recruiting agents, and, by their powers of persuasion and coercion, they soon altered the aspect of affairs. Provisions and stores were collected, two caravels were fitted out, and men were entered from Palos, Moguer, and Huelva, as well as from the little port of Lepe to the westward, and from Ayamonte, still farther west on the Portuguese frontier. A third vessel was at length secured, much larger than the other two, apparently called the *Santa María* or *Marigalante*, but Columbus himself only mentions her as the *Capitana*. Her owner, who was to go in her as master, was a young pilot named Juan de la Cosa, a native of Santoña, on the north coast of Spain.

The *Santa María* was called a "nao" or ship, and she was of about 100 tons burden. She was built with a deck, a high poop, and a forecastle. Two of her masts had square sails, but the mizzen was lateen rigged. On the mainmast was the mainsail (*maestra*) and a maintopsail (*gabia*). The foremast had a foresail (called *trinquete*), and there was a spritsail (*cebadera*). The courses were enlarged in fair weather by lacing canvas to their leeches, called *lunetas*. The mizzen lateen sail was called *mezana*. The armament consisted of the small guns used on board ship in those days, called lombards. The crew numbered fifty-two men all told, including the Admiral and the principal officers of the expedition. But while the crews of the two caravels were all natives of Palos and the neighbouring towns, the Admiral's ship's company came from various parts of the Peninsula. Two were natives of Santoña, followers of Juan de la Cosa, and all those who hailed



OCEANICA CLASSIS.

From Leandro de Cosco's Latin version of the Admiral's letter (Rome, 1493).

CRISTOVAL COLON

ALMIRANTE MAYOR DEL MAR OCCEANO,
Virrey y Governador General de las Yndias,
su Descubridor y Conquistador.

Copiado de un Quadro muy ... que se conserva en la Librería.

from the north of Spain were probably known to him, and attracted by his presence

Among these it is very interesting to find an Englishman from Lajes, a small place in Galicia, not far from Coruña. He is entered in the list as Tallarte de Lajes (*Ingles*). An English mariner trading to Coruña may well have married there and settled down at Lajes until his love of adventure was aroused by the news from Palos. Tallarte would be the Spanish form of Allard or Alard, a corruption of Aethelwald. The first English admiral was Gervase Alard of Winchelsea in 1306, and there were Alards for several generations, afterwards, who were sailors of Winchelsea. It is not improbable that one of them was among the first discoverers of the new world, and a companion of Columbus. There was also an Irishman among the crew, one William of Galway.

The chief magistrate, or master-at-arms, was Diego de Arana, a near relation of the lady, whether wife or not, at Cordova, with whom the Admiral left his sons. Young Diego had been nominated as page to Prince Juan, the heir-apparent of Castille and Aragon, on the 8th of May, with a salary of 9400 maravedis a year, but he remained at Cordova for a time with Beatriz Enriquez to complete his education. The complement of the *Santa Maria*, officers and men, was as follows:—

Admiral	Cristoval Colon	*Overseer*	Rodrigo Sanchez of Segovia.
Master and Owner	Juan de la Cosa of Santoña.	*Secretary*	*Rodrigo de Escobedo.
Pilot	Sancho Ruiz.	*Master at Arms*	*Diego de Arana of Cordova.
Boatswain	Maestre Diego.	*Volunteer*	*Pedro Gutierrez. (*A gentleman of the King's bedchamber.*)
Surgeon	Maestre Alonso of Moguer.		
Assistant Surgeon	Maestre Juan		

Volunteer	*Bachiller Bernardo de Tapia of Ledesma	*Seamen*	*Diego —— of Mambles
			*Diego de Mendoza
Steward	Pedro Terreros		*Diego de Montalvan of Jaen
Admiral's Servant	Diego de Salcedo		*Domingo de Bermeo.
			*Francisco de Godoy of Seville
Page	Pedro de Acevedo		
Interpreter	Luis de Torres (*converted Jew.*)		*Francisco de Vergara of Seville
Seamen	Rodrigo de Jerez		*Francisco —— of Aranda
	Garcia Ruiz of Santoña		*Francisco Henao of Avila
	Pedro de Villa of Santoña		*Francisco Jimenes of Seville
	Rodrigo Escobar		*Gabriel Baraona of Belmonte
	Francisco of Huelva		*Gonzalo Fernandez of Segovia
	Ruy Fernandez of Huelva		*Gonzalo Fernandez of Leon
	Pedro Bilbao of Lariabezua		*Guillermo Ires (of Galway)
	*Alonzo Velez of Seville		*Jorge Gonzalez of Trigueros.
	*Alonzo Perez Osorio		*Juan de Cueva
Assayer and Silversmith	*Castillo of Seville		*Juan Patiño of La Serena
Seamen	*Antonio of Jaen		*Juan del Burgo of Avila
	*Alvaro Perez Osorio		*Pedro Carbacho of Caceres
	*Cristoval de Alamo of Niebla.		*Pedro——of Talavera
	*Diego Garcia of Jerez		*Sebastian of Majorca
	*Diego de Tordoya of Cabeza de Vaca		*Talharte de Lajes (*Ingles.*)
	*Diego de Cajalla of Almeden		

The second vessel was commanded by Martin Alonzo Pinzon, who had done so much towards the equipment of the expedition. Señor Asensio truly observes that if "Colon was the head, Pinzon was the right arm." His caravel of about fifty tons was named the *Pinta*, and was owned by Gomez Rascon and Cristoval Quintero.

who were on board as seamen. Another seaman was Juan Bermudez, the future discoverer of Bermuda. One of Pinzon's brothers was with him as master. The *Pinta* was strongly built, and was originally lateen rigged on all three masts. She was the fastest sailer in the little squadron. Her complement numbered eighteen, as follows:—

Captain	Martin Alonzo Pinzon	*Seamen*	Juan de Sevilla
Master	Francisco Martin Pinzon.	,,	Garcia Alonzo
		,,	Gomez Rascon (*owner*).
Pilot	Cristoval Garcia Sarmiento.		Cristoval Quintero (*owner*).
Boatswain	Bartolomè Garcia	,,	Diego Bermudez.
Surgeon	Garci Hernandez.	,,	Juan Bermudez
Purser	Juan de Jeroz	,,	Francisco Garcia Gallegos of Moguer
Caulker	Juan Perez		
Seamen	Rodrigo Bermudez de Triana of Alcala de la Guadaira.	,,	Francisco Garcia Vallejo.
,,	Juan Rodriguez Bermejo of Molinos	,,	Pedro de Arcos

The third vessel, a caravel of forty tons, was owned by the Niño family of Palos, three of whom sailed in her. Hence she was called the *Niña*. She was commanded by Vicente Yanez Pinzon, and had a complement of eighteen men

Captain	Vicente Yanez Pinzon.	*Seamen*	*Diego de Torpa.
		,,	*Francisco Fernandez.
Master and Part Owner	Juan Niño.	,,	*Hernando de Porcuna
Pilots	Pero Alonso Niño.	,,	*Juan de Urniga.
,,	Bartolomè Roldan.	,,	*Juan Morcillo.
Seamen	Francisco Niño.	,,	*Juan del Villar.
,,	Gutierrez Perez.	,,	*Juan de Mendoza.
,,	Juan Ortiz	,,	*Martin de Logrosan
,,	Alonso Gutierrez Querido.	,,	*Pedro de Foronda.
		,,	*Tristan de San Jorge

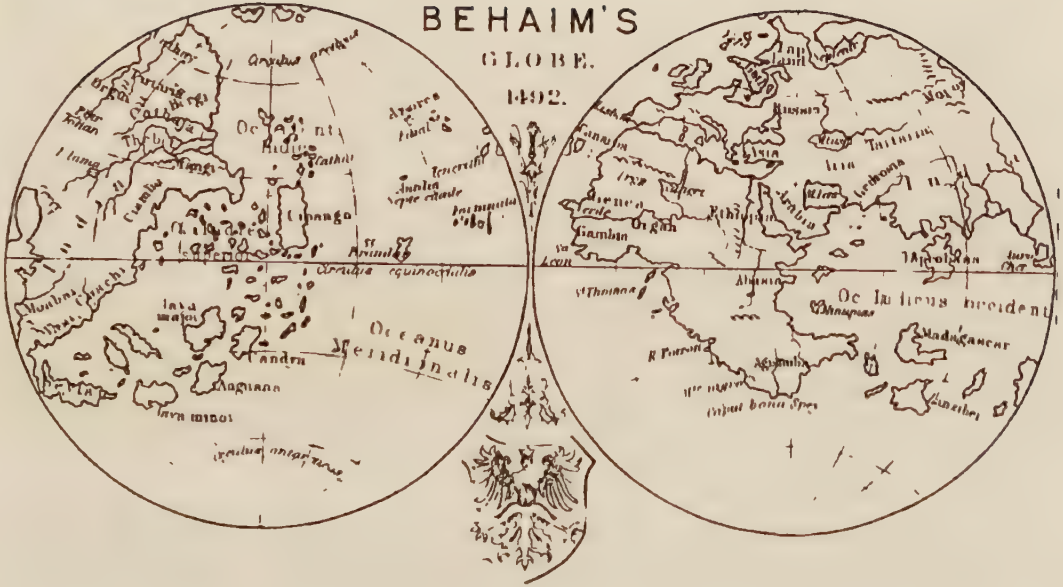
Total of the three ships eighty-eight souls. (*Those with an asterisk were left behind at Navidad*)

Throughout the months of June and July the greatest activity was displayed, and Palos had never seen so busy a time The funds supplied to the Queen by Santangel were altogether insufficient, but the necessary sums were obtained through friends of the Admiral, or well-wishers of the expedition, on the personal guarantee of Columbus It has been suggested that Pinzon advanced what was needed On this point there is no reliable information, but one thing is certain, all loans were honourably repaid

Columbus held many consultations with his friends at La Rabida, and with Pinzon, respecting the route. He relied for guidance chiefly on the chart that had been sent to him by Toscanelli But he was about to enter a new and unknown world, where no existing chart would be of any avail All that was known of the old world could be of no use to him there. It is fortunate, however, that in this very year stock should have been taken of geographical knowledge up to 1492 Then Columbus began the great work of his life, the discovery of the new world and in the same year Martin Behaim completed the great work of *his* life, his terrestrial globe

The globe of Martin Behaim, still preserved at Nuremburg, is now the oldest terrestrial globe in existence It is drawn on parchment, beautifully illuminated and ornamented, and stretched on a sphere 20 inches in diameter Its great importance consists in the fact that it is an exact representation of the geographical knowledge of the period immediately preceding the first voyage of Columbus As the map of Toscanelli is lost,

BEHAIM'S GLOBE. 1492.



the Behaim globe is the only extant document which does this. For the first time the two hemispheres are clearly shown, with the route round the Cape to India, and the discoveries of Marco Polo. The western edge of the Western Hemisphere is fringed by the Azores, Canary Isles, and Cape Verdes. West of Ireland is the island of Brazil, and west of the Cape Verde Isles is the fabulous Isle of St. Brandon, bordering on the equator Then, with no very great width of ocean between, Zipangu and a labyrinth of smaller islands stretches across the torrid zone and far into the temperate zones on either side, occupying the centre of the hemisphere The eastern side is occupied with a continental mass, having Cathay marked on it, and other names made known by Marco Polo. Behaim's globe should be well imprinted on the reader's mind before accompanying Columbus across the Atlantic; for it represents the state of geographical knowledge when he sailed, and shows exactly the nature of his expectations. The map of Toscanelli must have closely resembled that of Behaim, with the addition of the island of Antilla in mid ocean, and the names of Zaiton, Quisay, Mango, Catay, conspicuously shown on the eastern continent. With the map of Toscanelli, Columbus took with him the materials for drawing plane charts, the declination tables of Regiomontanus, and the work of Pierre d'Ailly The quadrants, astrolabes, and compasses were prepared under the personal supervision of the Admiral, who paid close attention to every detail.

At length everything was ready. It was the 2nd of August Columbus and all his men assembled in the little church of St. George, at Palos, and received the Holy Communion. Fray Juan Perez exhorted them to

trust in God and in their Admiral, and dismissed them with his benediction, and a solemn prayer for success and prosperity to the expedition. The majority were natives of the district, and these went from the church to bid a last farewell to their families. On the same day vessels of the State passed down the river, laden with all the Jews in the province of Huelva, to be taken across and landed on the coast of Africa. Cruel bigotry and scientific research were brought, as it were, face to face.

Half an hour before sunrise, on Friday the 3rd of August, a great crowd was assembled along the banks of the Odiel. As the sun appeared over La Rabida the three little vessels weighed their anchors. The Admiral displayed the standard of Castille, and let fall his mainsail, on which was painted the sign of the redemption. Fetching way, the squadron sailed over the bar of Saltes, men waving their caps and women their handkerchiefs until the white lateen sails looked like the wings of gulls hovering over the sea. Few ever expected to see them again. The adventurers seemed to be going to certain death. It was a memorable event, and it was felt to be so, but none knew how great. Looking back at all that has grown out of it in the four centuries that have since elapsed, we now know that the sailing of those three little boats over the bar of Saltes was, since the fall of Rome, the most momentous event in the world's history.

The Admiral shaped a course for the Canaries—the *Pinta* leading, the *Santa Maria* next, but the *Niña* proved a bad sailer, owing to the defective cut of her lateen sails. Columbus reckoned his distances run in Italian miles, of which there were four to a league; and

he calculated that on the first day he ran sixty miles before sunset with a fresh breeze from the land On the 6th, when there was a chopping sea, the rudder of the *Pinta* came unshipped without any apparent cause, suspicion falling on Bascon and Quintero, the owners, who were serving on board, and are supposed to have repented of the agreement they had made. Pinzon managed to rig a temporary makeshift, and in that plight they reached Grand Canary. Here the *Pinta* received a thorough overhaul, the rudder was repaired, and her rig was altered from lateen to square sails on the fore and main masts. The little squadron then proceeded to the island of Gomera, anchoring there on the 2nd of September. In passing Teneriffe they observed a great column of flame issuing from the peak—a magnificent sight, which might have been considered as a commemoration of the voyage, but which the sailors rather perversely looked upon as a bad omen.

Gomera is the most westerly of the Canary Islands, and the little squadron found a sheltered anchorage in the bay on the north-east side, off the town of Palmas. Some days were occupied in getting the ships ready for sea, and filling them up with water and provisions. In the morning of the 6th of September Columbus sailed from Gomera, but for two days he was becalmed between that island and Teneriffe, and on the 8th there was a head sea; but on Sunday the 9th the ships were fairly on their voyage. The men at the helm, however, steered badly from want of experience, and the Admiral had occasion to reprimand them several times for letting the ship's head fall off The people were fearful of the unheard of character of the voyage Many were timid and credulous; so the Admiral arranged that the reckon-

Pg-76

ing for their inspection should make the ship's runs shorter than the real estimate entered in his own journal If the voyage proved to be a long one, they would have so much less cause for alarm and panic This was a precaution fully justified by the circumstances.

By mid Sept. 1492

On the 13th of September Columbus first observed that the variation was westerly He had crossed the line of no variation, which was then in about the longitude of Flores, the westernmost of the Azores By the 17th the variation had increased to a point westerly and the strange phenomenon excited and alarmed the sailors—

Tried to overcome crew's fears

> "The compass, like an old friend, false at last,
> In our most need, appalled them"

The Admiral, with unwearied patience and kindness of manner, laboured to allay their fears After thinking the matter over in his own mind, he hit upon a probable cause, which he carefully explained to his people. The conduct of the needle had been detected by observing the bearing of the pole star It was not however, the needle, but the pole star that was in an abnormal state. It was describing a circle in the heavens, while the compass was as true as ever. This satisfied the men The proposition was correct The pole star really does move in a circle, but this movement was very far from being equal to the change observed in the direction of the needle Columbus did not discover the variation of the compass on this occasion. It is scarcely credible that variation had not been remarked by the numerous intelligent seamen who had long used the compass in navigating the Mediterranean from end to end. What Columbus did discover

was far more important. This was the change of variation from easterly to westerly after crossing a point of no variation.

Columbus was now in the region of the trade-wind, always blowing his ships westward in exquisite weather, and a smooth sea, generally like the river at Seville, so that the men often bathed alongside. The sunrises and sunsets were indescribably lovely, and sometimes the clouds on the horizon formed themselves into such close resemblance to islands that the most experienced eye might have been deceived. The lonely adventurers watched every sign with eagerness and anxiety. Antilla or St. Brandan might rise above the horizon at any moment. Many birds were seen, and sometimes a ship's boy knocked one down with a stone. The direction of their flight was carefully noted. Columbus mentions a *garajao*, the name for a tern in the Canary Islands, and *rabo de junco*, which means literally "tail of a rush." This is the boatswain-bird, which breeds at Bermuda and in the Bahamas. The two long projecting central tail feathers are never seen separated and seem to form one, like a marlin-spike, whence the name. Another bird frequently seen is called an *alcatraz* by Columbus. The word means a pelican, and was also applied to the largest bird in the southern seas, our word *albatross* being a corruption of it. But the *alcatraz* of Columbus was a dark-brown gannet very common in the tropics, called a *booby* by sailors. They also saw the *rabiforcado*, "which makes the *alcatraz* throw up what it has swallowed and eats it itself, living on nothing else. There are many at the Cape de Verde Islands." *Rabiforcado* is the frigate or man-o'-war bird, which breeds on the Bahamas and goes far out to sea; but this robber gull must be the

long-tailed skua of the Canaries, which ranges over the Atlantic as far as the Cape of Good Hope. *Pardalas*, or sandpipers, were also seen. In the sea, playing round the ship, there were many fish, and they caught *tunnas* and *dorados*.

Soon after the panic about the conduct of the needle had been appeased, the ships began to pass quantities of weed, and soon the sea seemed to be covered with it. A fresh alarm arose. They were sailing into a sea of weed which would get denser and denser until the ships would become immovable, and they would all perish. Columbus reasoned with them, and explained away this imaginary danger also. Yet it was a strange sight even to himself. He examined the gulf weed, which looked so golden and beautiful as it floated in masses on the deep blue sea, and noticed that it was covered with small balls like berries. This Sargasso Sea, first described by Columbus, is midway in the Atlantic, between the Azores, Canaries, and Cape Verdes. Andrea Bianco, in his map of 1436, gave it the name of "Mar de Baga," from the vesicles on the gulf weed (*Fucus natans*), like berries, or *bagas* in Portuguese. The northern border of the weedy sea is near the Azores, and its existence must have been reported to Bianco through some of the early Genoese discoverers of that group. Columbus was being introduced to the mighty oceanic phenomena which his acute intellect would enable him to grasp in part, but it would be centuries before they would be pieced together and understood as one harmonious whole. Maury likens the Atlantic, with its Gulf Stream, to a basin of water to which a circular motion has been given. Any floating substances put into the basin will be found crowding together near its centre where there is the least motion.

"Just such a basin is the Atlantic Ocean to the Gulf Stream, and the Sargasso Sea is the centre of the whirl"

A great cause of alarm to the sailors was the constant easterly wind, always blowing day after day, a source of anxiety which increased as day succeeded day. It made them think that they would never be able to return home. Fortunately there was a contrary wind on the 22nd of September. The Admiral observed that "this foul wind was very necessary for me, for my people had become much excited, thinking that no winds blew in those seas that would carry the ships back to Spain." He doubtless made much capital out of that one day of westerly breezes.

After they had been three weeks at sea, the Admiral began to think that Antilla should be near at hand He closed with the *Pinta* to compare notes with Martin Alonzo Pinzon on the 23rd, and to converse about certain islands on the chart of Toscanelli, and the chart was sent from one ship to the other on a line. Both agreed that they must be very near Antilla. At sunset Martin Alonzo hailed the *Santa Maria*, and with great joy announced that he saw land. He turned the hands up, and repeated the "Gloria in excelsis Deo." Columbus did the same. The crews manned the rigging in all three ships, and declared that it was land A course was shaped towards it over a smooth sea, but it was soon found that they had been deceived by the fantastic shape of clouds on the horizon. For the next few days the air was soft and mild, and the sea smooth as a river, with much weed floating on its surface. On the 4th of October the best run was made during the voyage, upwards of 200 miles. But the great length of the passage across was telling upon the spirits of the men, and the

frequent false alarms made them doubt whether land would ever appear, and caused irritation. A mutinous spirit became more and more manifest. The Admiral tried to encourage them by assurances that land was close at hand, but he added that "whether they complained or not, he would go on until he found the Indies, with the help of God." This was on the 10th of October. The standing order was that the *Pinta* and *Niña* should close the Admiral at sunrise and sunset.

On the 11th the sea was rougher than at any other time during the voyage, but there were several signs that land was close at hand. A green rush floated past, and the *Pinta* saw a cane and a pole, and picked up a small stick with marks of having been cut. The *Niña* reported having seen a small branch with berries on it. Sunset was at 5.41 P.M., when the course was altered from W.S.W. to west. Orders were given to keep a very sharp look-out, and the *Pinta*, being the best sailer, went ahead.

At 10 P.M. the Admiral was on the poop of the flagship with other officers, gazing intently into the darkness, the moon not having yet risen. Suddenly he saw a light with an uncertain motion, and he called to Pedro Gutierrez, who also saw it. He asked the overseer Rodrigo Sanchez, whether he saw it, but he did not make it out, owing to his not being in a position whence it could be visible. The Admiral saw the light again once or twice, like a wax taper raised and lowered. He made certain that land was in sight, but determined to keep the same course until daylight, under very easy sail. While the Admiral was conversing with his officers about the light, a seaman on the forecastle, a native of Lepe, saw it also, and cried out, "A light! land!" Sal-

P9-81

cedo, the Admiral's servant, told him that the Admiral had seen the light; and Columbus himself replied that he had seen the light on shore already (1)

It had been full moon on the 5th of October. On the night of the 11th the moon rose at 11 P.M., and at 2 A.M. on the morning of the 12th the look-out man on board the *Pinta*, whose name was Rodrigo de Triana, reported land in sight. At that hour the moon was 39° above the horizon on the 12th of October 1492, and would have been shining brightly on the sandy shores of an island some miles ahead—the moon being in its third quarter, and a little behind the look-out man. The ships clewed up all the sails, except the courses, and hove-to until daylight They then anchored at the eastern end of the south shore of a moderate-sized island.

Oct. 12, 1492 Anchored at Island

Columbus went on shore in an armed boat, with Rodrigo de Escovedo, the secretary, and Rodrigo Sanchez, the overseer, followed by Martin Alonzo and Vicente Yanez Pinzon, the captains of the two other ships. The Admiral sprang on the beach, bearing the royal standard of Spain, knelt down and returned thanks, solemnly taking possession of the land in the name of the King and Queen The two captains each carried a banner with a green cross, and on either side of it the letters F and Y, surmounted by crowns A crowd of natives stood round as spectators, and the Admiral presented them with caps and strings of beads Afterwards many of them swam off to the ships with parrots and skeins of cotton, which they bartered for hawks' bells and beads They wore no clothing, and had fine well-shaped bodies, good faces, and coarse hair like a horse's mane, cut short. Their only arms were spears tipped with fish bone, and, seeing some with the marks

Friendly naked natives given beads. ↓ only spears

Took island in name of the King &

of wounds, the Admiral concluded that parties from t
mainland came to hunt and capture them. No wom
were visible. They had dug out canoes, some very lar
and capable of carrying forty or forty-five men, othe

LANDFALL OF COLUMBUS.

From "La lettera delle isole che ha trovato nouamente il Re di Spagna" (Florence, 1493)

smaller, which they managed very skilfully with paddle. The island was a good size (*bien grande*) a very level, bright with green trees, with plenty of wat and a very large lagoon in the centre.

Thus was the mighty enterprise achieved, mighty in its conception, still more important in its results. Columbus believed that he had discovered a new route to the Indies. He had done infinitely more. He had discovered another continent, and the consequences of his discovery would be vast beyond what it was possible for the greatest genius of the fifteenth-century even to conceive. The probable distance run, between Gomera and the newly discovered island, was 3105 miles, or an average of 105 miles a day in thirty-five days, the course W. 5° S. The longest run was 200 miles, or eight knots an hour, the average rate four knots. The difference of latitude between Gomera and the new land was 235 miles, and Columbus noticed that the colour of the skins of his islanders was the same as that of the natives of the Canary Islands, which he attributed to their abode on nearly the same parallels.

The Admiral supposed that he was near the Zipangu of Toscanelli's chart, and was anxious to continue his voyage. He determined to remain at anchor until the afternoon of the second day, and then to steer to the south-west, for he had seen some small gold ornaments worn by the islanders, and had understood their signs to mean that there was a king to the south who possessed much gold. At dawn on the 14th the boats were sent to explore the eastern coast of the island by rounding the south-east point. It was found to trend N.N.E., and the people came out to the boats swimming and in canoes, bringing them food and fresh water, and saying that they had come from heaven. A reef was found to encircle the island, with perfectly smooth water between it and the shore. The Admiral, looking for strategic points, observed a peninsula which could easily be con-

verted into an island, where a strong fort might be built.

Returning from this boat expedition, the Admiral got under weigh the same afternoon and resumed the voyage, taking with him six of the natives to learn Spanish and act as guides. The native name of the island was Guanahaní, with the accent on the last syllable, as Las Casas informs us The Admiral gave it the name of San Salvador. It is identical with the modern Watling Island, one of the Bahamas, as I propose to demonstrate in the next chapter.

On leaving San Salvador the cloud appearances on the horizon so closely resembled land that Columbus believed he was in sight of a great number of islands, and he even hesitated towards which he should shape his course The wind was light from the eastward, and soon carried his ships across to the only real island, about five to seven leagues distant. He found it to be five miles long on the side facing San Salvador, and ten miles * east and west He sailed along the south side to the westward until night, and, observing another larger island to the westward, he clewed up the sails and anchored off the western point. As he was resolved not to pass any island without taking possession, he landed at dawn on the 16th of October, and gave the island the name of Santa Maria de la Concepcion. It is the Rum Cay of modern maps The wind came round to south-east while he was on shore, so he hurried on board again, and the squadron was under weigh by 10 A.M. Two of the natives of Guanahaní, who had been carried off, here effected their escape from the *Niña* by swimming

* Las Casas has leagues, an obvious clerical error

to a large canoe. When another native came with skeins of cotton to barter, the Admiral gave him several presents and allowed him to depart with his canoe, that his favourable report might counteract the contrary accounts of the fugitives.

The island seen from Santa Maria appeared to be very long, and its northern end bore west about nine leagues. It was low, and trended north-west and south-east for about twenty-eight leagues. The Admiral named it Fernandina. Navigating all that day, with calms and light winds, he succeeded in edging away to the south, and at dawn on the 17th he anchored at its southern end, near a village. Fernandina is the Long Island of modern charts. Having taken in water, the Admiral weighed at noon, with the intention of sailing round Fernandina, the wind being south. He came off a remarkable harbour with two entrances divided by a rocky islet, both very narrow. Within there was ample room for a hundred ships if there had been sufficient depth. He sent the water-casks to be filled, and occupied the time in strolling among the trees and observing their differences, how some resembled palms, while many others were different from any he had ever seen. Shaping a course north-west, he came to a part of the coast where it trended more to the west, but here the wind shifted and blew from north-west. The Admiral therefore abandoned his plan of circumnavigating Fernandina, and sailed south during the night, anchoring again at the south-east end of the island.

Columbus had been told by the natives of an island called Samoete to the southward, where there was said to be much gold. At dawn on the 19th he made sail in search of it, scattering the ships to make more certain

of sighting the land Sailing south-east, he ordered the *Pinta* to hold an east, and the *Niña* a south-south-east course until noon, and then to close After three hours an island was sighted, and all three ships arrived at its northern point before noon where there is a rocky islet and a reef of rocks outside The men from Guanahaní called this new island Samoete and Columbus named it Isabella It bore east from Fernandina, and is the modern Crooked Island The coast trended from the islet westward for twelve leagues to a promontory named Cabo Hermoso Here he anchored, and found the land to be the most beautiful he had yet seen, while a delicious scent of flowers was wafted from the shore. He landed and saw many natives, who brought balls of cotton and small spears to barter, but he could find no king, and the gold appeared to be a delusion Tidings were received of countries called Cuba and Bohio, and on October 24th the Admiral weighed, with the intention of proceeding to Cuba. It came on to blow very hard with rain, and the squadron was obliged to lie to. but on the 25th a good run was made with a west-south-west and west course, until a group of islets was sighted and named "Las Islas de Arenas" This is now called Ragged Isles Here they anchored, and on the 27th they ran fifty-eight miles south-south-west until land was sighted On Sunday, the 28th of October, Columbus entered the mouth of a fine river where there was safe anchorage, and gazed upon a land the most lovely his eyes had ever rested on It was a river in Cuba, which he named San Salvador, now known as Puerto Naranjo He gave the name of Juana to the island of Cuba, in honour of the young Prince of Spain

NOTE

(1) *Reward for Sighting the Land.*

The Queen had intimated her intention of giving a reward to the man who first sighted land. No one doubted that the light was on shore, nor was any such doubt expressed for the next three centuries. This having been universally accepted, the Admiral himself was undoubtedly the first who saw it. He pointed it out to Pedro Gutierrez. The story of a sailor from Lepe having seen it from the forecastle is told by Oviedo, who adds that Salcedo, the Admiral's servant, told the man at once that Columbus had already seen it. There was no question about the look-out man of the *Pinta*, who reported land four hours afterwards, because all believed that the light was on shore. The name of the look-out man is doubtful. It was reported to the Admiral at the time that his name was Rodrigo de Triana. Oviedo gives the same name; but one of the sailors of the *Pinta*, named Francisco Garcia Vallejo of Moguer, in a deposition taken on 1st October 1515, speaking from memory twenty-two years after the event, gave evidence that the look-out man's name was Juan Rodriguez Bermejo of Molinos. Two witnesses who were not in the expedition, and who spoke from hearsay, probably from what they had heard from Vallejo, also said that the name was Juan Bermejo. Navarrete has suggested (iv. p. 613) that Rodrigo de Triana and Juan Rodriguez Bermejo of Molinos were one and the same name, Columbus, as a foreigner, mistaking Rodrigo for Rodriguez, and that he put Triana because the man was known there, though a native of Molinos. This conjecture is scarcely admissible, and is disposed of by the fact that both names occur in the list of the *Pinta's* crew. The Admiral, making the entry at the time, was no doubt right.

When the narrative of the voyage, including these facts about sighting the land, came before the Queen, she could have no doubt that her reward belonged to the Admiral. The appearance in the form of a light kindled her religious enthusiasm, for she held it to be a sign of the Gospel's light accompanying the ships across the ocean. Under such circumstances it would have been very difficult and most ungracious for the

Pg-88

Admiral to have declined her reward, in order that it might be given to a man who had not earned it. It consisted of a pension of 10,000 maravedis, secured on dues from the shambles at Cordova, and he at once transferred it to Beatriz Enriquez. Oviedo says (lib. ii. cap. 5) that the seaman from Lepe, who saw the light after the Admiral and Gutierrez, was so disgusted at not receiving the reward that he went over to Africa and became a renegade. Oviedo got this gossip years afterwards from Vicente Yanez Pinzon and Hernan Perez Matheos. The latter was not in the expedition. The story was probably untrue. If the man became an apostate his not getting the reward certainly could not have been the pretext, for he had no ground whatever for expecting it, and no right to it. Navarrete, in referring to Oviedo, assumes that it was the look-out man of the *Pinta*, and not the man from Lepe who saw the light, that turned renegade. And other writers have followed him. But the words of Oviedo are quite clear. "Aquel marinero que dixo primero que veia *lumbre* en tierra, tornado despues en España, porque no se le dieron las albricias, despechado de aquesto, se paso en Africa y renego de la fé."

Likely NOT true

A charge of unfairness has been made against Columbus in this matter. Such a charge is unfounded and absurd. It is true that, with our later geographical knowledge, many of us are now convinced that the light must have been in a canoe and not on shore. But this does not affect the fact that, at the time, the light was universally believed to be on the land, and that the Queen, in that belief, decided with perfect fairness.

P9-89

No doubt the island identified by Columbus was "San Salvador"

CHAPTER V.

THE LANDFALL?

It is an interesting point to ascertain, without doubt, the landfall of Columbus by the identification of the island of Guanahaní or San Salvador. The materials for a decision are to be found in the description of the island, and in the course taken thence to Cuba, which are given in the full abstract of the journal of Columbus by Las Casas, as well as in the authoritative maps of the pilot, Juan de la Cosa, and of Herrera. If the course is traced back from Cuba with close attention to the words of the journal, an island will be reached which will agree with the description, and which must needs be Guanahaní. The maps of La Cosa and Herrera will afford corroborative testimony. Yet, in spite of these unerring guides, the highest authorities have differed on the subject. the controversy has extended over a hundred years, and the landfall has been claimed for at least five different islands Discussion has at least cleared the ground, the disputants have ably exposed each other's fallacies, and to such an extent that an inquirer is now able to investigate the question with an assurance of ascertaining the actual landfall of Columbus

hundred

FIRST VOYAGE JOURNALS ARE lost But ...

The journal of Columbus kept during his first voyage is lost; but a full abstract, in the handwriting of Las Casas, was found among the archives of the Duke of

P9-90

Infantado in 1791 It is written on parchment in a small folio volume of seventy-six leaves. It was examined by the learned Don Juan Bautista Muñoz, the cosmographer of the Indies, and author of the *Historia del Nuevo Mundo*, and was published by Navarrete in 1825.* This is the sole authority for the position of the landfall, and all arguments must be based on it

But some side light is thrown on the question by early maps with details derived from the great navigator's original charts No charts under his own hand have come down to us, but a map drawn by Juan de la Cosa, the pilot and owner of the *Santa Maria*, is still in existence It was drawn in 1500 by that very able draughtsman who was the companion of the Admiral on his first and second voyages After having been lost for centuries, the map of La Cosa was found and identified by Baron A von Humboldt in 1832, in the library of Baron Walchenaer at Paris At the sale of that library in 1853 it was bought by the Queen of Spain, and is now in the Naval Museum at Madrid It is drawn on ox hide, 5 feet 9 inches long by 3 feet 2 inches, and is illustrated by a picture of St Christopher bearing the infant Christ across a river, in allusion to the achievement of Columbus. The Bahama Islands are shown as discovered in 1492, with one or two additions derived from information collected afterwards. On the map of Juan de la Cosa the complete Bahama group is not shown, Guanahani being the most northern

* The journal of Columbus was translated into English and published by Samuel Kettell (Boston, 1827) at the suggestion of Mr Ticknor It was also translated in part by Admiral Becher, and published in his "Landfall of Columbus," London, 1856

of the outer islands. Samana and Mainana (Mariguana) appear as islands to the south of, and distinct from, Guanahaní.

In 1600 a more complete and accurate map of the Bahamas was published by Antonio de Herrera, the official historian of the Indies. Herrera had access to every available source of information. He had the charts drawn by Columbus himself, the map of Juan de la Cosa, and all the results of subsequent visits to the group. He was thus able to correct the La Cosa map, and to add the islands to the north of Guanahaní. The map of Herrera retains the old native names, most of which have disappeared from modern maps Guanahaní, Yumay (for Long Island or Fernandina), Someto or Xumeto, Samana, and Mayaguana, occur both on the map of Juan de la Cosa and on that of Herrera.

A comparison between the map of Herrera and a modern chart will show that Herrera gives all the islands, and that the relative positions are correct. Consequently it is quite clear that no other island can be Guanahaní (the landfall) which appears on Herrera's map, where Guanahaní also appears. Neither Samana nor Mayaguana can be themselves and Guanahaní at the same time It is also clear that the landfall must be in the same relative position with reference to the other islands as is given to Guanahaní by Herrera The shapes of the islands are distorted, but their relative positions are correct on his map. An inspection of it shows that Guanahaní is the fifth of the outer islands of the Bahamas, counting from the north Then turning to a modern chart, it will be found that the fifth island is the one now called Watling Island

	Herrera.	*Modern Chart*
1	Yucayoneque.	Abaco
2	Cigateo	Eleuthera
3	Curateo.	Little S. Salvador.
4.	Guanima	Cat Island.
5	Guanahani.	Watling Island.
6	Triangula.	Rocks near Samana.
7.	Samana.	Samana.
8	Mayaguana	Mayaguana
9	Amana and Caicos	Caicos group.
10.	Caneiba.	Turks Island

Herrera's map establishes one requirement that must be satisfied in deciding to which island belongs the honour of being the true landfall of Columbus. It must be the fifth of the outer Bahama Islands, counting from the north. There are twenty-three other requirements contained in the journal of Columbus, and all twenty-four must be satisfied by the island which is to be identified as the landfall

1. It must be the fifth of the outer Bahamas, counting from the north
2. It must be of moderate size *Boa grande*, also *Isleta*.*
3. A very large lagoon in the centre
4. The south half of the east side trending N.N.E.
5. Encircled by a reef
6. Quite flat.
7. A tongue of land, like an island, yet not one, forming a harbour at the south part of the east side.
8. The second island bearing south-west, distant seven leagues
9. The side of the second island approached from Guanahani trending north and south
10. Length of one side of the second island five miles, of the other ten miles.

* 11th October 1492 and 5th January 1493 of Journal.

ANTº DE HERRERA
1601.
Modern Names in Italic
Yas de los Lucayos
Florida
Canal de Bahama
Bahama
Viu avoneque (Gt Abaco)
Cigateo Eleuthera
Curateo (Mat. S Salvador)
Guanima (Cat I.)
Guanahana (Watlings I.)
Cabeça de los Martires (Cayo Sel)
Bimini
Habacoa (Andros)
Exuma
Los Testigos
Jardin del Rey
Triangula
Samana
Yuma
Xumeto (Crooked I.)
Habanas
Hobabana
Ybaque (Acklin I.)
Mayaguana (Mariguana
C S Anton
C U B A
Cubana
Xagua
Almanu y Cayciba (Turks)
Abreojo (Mouchoir Pass)
C de Corrientes
Pta de Pinos
Dos Hermanas
Jardin de la Reyna
Mayaguana
Caycos
Caraman (Silver Bk)
Macarey (Navidad)
Santiago
C de Mayi
La Tortuga
C de Cruz
Escondido
C de S. Nicolas
C Frances
Caiman grande
Abreojo
Caimito
Guanabo
Yaguana
G de Samana
Los Carmanos
Pta del Negrillo
Pta de Morenta
Xamaica
Frailes
Prao
ESPAÑOLA
C del dengano
Azua
S Domingo
Pasabaço
Cayno
C del Falcon
C de Tiburon
Pta Baque
La Brea
Ocoa
Nisao
R Ozama
Pta Catalina
La Saona

P9-93

11 The third island in sight from the second.
12. Third island eight leagues from the second, bearing west.
13. Trend of the third island N.N.W. and S.S.E., twenty leagues long.
14. A large shallow harbour on the south-west side of the third island, with two entrances.
15. Part of the west coast of the third island trending east and west
16. The native name of the fourth island must be Samoete
17. Fourth island not in sight from the third.
18. Fourth island east of the third.
19 A rocky islet at the north end of the fourth island.
20 Fourth island higher than the others.
21 Coast of fourth island makes an angle, and seemed to form two islands with an islet between them
22. Twelve leagues from the rocky islet at the north end of the fourth island to the South Cape.
23. Fourth island fifty-seven miles north-east from the "Islas de Arena"
24 Cuba in sight after sailing fifty-one miles S.S.W. from "Islas de Arena."

Navarrete, Kettell (the translator of the Journal of Columbus), Mr. G. Gibbs, who had resided some years on Turks Island, and Mr. Major, in the first edition of his "Select Letters of Columbus," contend that Turks Island was the landfall. Turks Island is the tenth of the outer Bahama Islands on Herrera's map, while Guanahaní is the fifth, so that the authority of Herrera is against them. This little island is indeed the most southern of the Bahama group. It is true that it possesses two of the requirements. It has large lagoons, and is surrounded by a reef. Navarrete was induced to fix upon Turks Island because he erroneously assumed that Columbus always shaped a westerly course in sailing from island to island. He therefore thought that

Pg-94

Guanahaní must be the most easterly of the Bahamas, in order to make room for sufficient westing in the rest of the voyage to Cuba. He thought that the second island was Caicos, the third Inagua Grande, the fourth Inagua Chica But the course from Turks Island to Caicos would be north of west, while the course of Columbus to the second island was south-west. The third island of Columbus was in sight from the second. Inagua Chica is not in sight from Caicos. The third island of Columbus was sixty miles long Inagua Chica is only twelve miles long. The fourth island of Columbus bore east from the third Inagua Grande bears south-west from Inagua Chica. For these reasons Turks Island cannot be Guanahaní

Washington Irving, Humboldt, De la Roquette in a voluminous note to his French translation of Navarrete, and José María Asensio, the latest biographer of Columbus, maintain that Cat Island (called San Salvador on some maps of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries) was the landfall of Columbus Irving and Humboldt satisfactorily disprove the theory of Navarrete, but their own is still more untenable.

Cat Island is the fourth of the outer Bahama Islands on Herrera's map. Guanahaní is the fifth. The principal argument relied upon in support of Cat Island is that it was named San Salvador on maps of the seventeenth century Washington Irving says: "Established opinions should not be lightly molested. It is a good old rule that ought to be kept in mind in curious research as well as in territorial dealings. Do not disturb the ancient landmarks" But Cat Island is not an ancient landmark. It was first called San Salvador on the West India map in Blaeu's Dutch Atlas of 1635

Cat Island was first called San Salvador on West India map

for no earthly reason but the caprice of the draughtsman. The same map was published at Leyden by Joannes de Laet. D'Anville copied in 1746, and so the name got into some later maps. It represents no tradition, and has no title whatever to be called an ancient landmark.

Cat Island does not meet a single one of the requirements of the case. Guanahaní had a very large lagoon in the centre; Cat Island has none. Guanahaní was low; Cat Island is the loftiest in the Bahamas. Guanahaní had a reef round it; Cat Island has none. The south part of the east side of Guanahaní trended N N.E., on Cat Island it trends N N.W., and there is no peninsula forming a harbour as on Guanahaní The two islands could not be more different.

20 miles FROM GUANAHANI WAS ↓ HIS 2ND ISLAND

It is suggested by Washington Irving that the numerous islands which Columbus thought he saw when he sailed from Guanahaní were the "Cadena" or chain of rocks extending northwards from Exuma Island But these rocks are not in sight from Cat Island, the nearest being thirty-six miles away.

Columbus makes his second island south-west twenty-one miles from Guanahaní Irving makes him steer S.S.E. to Concepcion Cay, which he adopts as the second island; but it is much too small, only $2\frac{3}{4}$ miles long by $1\frac{3}{4}$ wide. Irving's third island is Exuma, but it is not in sight from Concepcion Cay, while Columbus says that the third island was in sight from the second. The fourth island, according to Irving, is Long Island; but there is no navigable route from Exuma to Long Island south of the north point. From Long Island, Washington Irving takes Columbus across all the mass of reefs and rocks awash on the Great Bahama Bank to the Mucarras Reef, an impossible piece of navigation. He makes the

P9-96
Where is the landfall

REEF

Mucarras Reef to be the Islas de Arena of Columbus But Mucarras is only twenty six miles from the coast of Cuba, while Columbus sailed fifty-four miles from the Islas de Arena before he even sighted Cuba For these reasons it is impossible that Cat Island can be the landfall

Unsatisfied with the theories of Navarrete and Washington Irving, Don Francisco A. de Varnhagen sought for a landfall elsewhere He published his theory in favour of the island of Mariguana, or Mayaguana, at Santiago de Chile in 1864 *

Mayaguana cannot be the landfall because it is shown with that name both on the maps of Juan de la Cosa and Herrera, with Guanahani the real landfall, far to the north

The starting-point in the argument of Varnhagen is that the fourth island of Columbus, which he called Isabella, and the native name of which was Samoete, is Crooked Island, because Crooked Island retains the name of Samoete On this point he is undoubtedly correct, and with this true departure he tries to work back, and he properly identifies Long Island with Fernandina or the third island of Columbus But then he runs off the track of Columbus, who came from the north Varnhagen takes him east to Acklin for the second island, and he chooses Mayaguana for Guanahani This island is twenty-three miles long, east and west, and from two to six broad It has no large lagoon in the centre, and is not surrounded by a reef A

* *La verdadera Guanahani de Colon Memoria por Don Francisco A. de Varnhagen y impresa en el tomo xxix de los anales de Chile* (Enero, 1864) with the text of the Journal of Columbus and map, pp 107

narrow peninsula forms a shallow harbour, but it is on the north, not the east coast. The many islands said to have been seen by Columbus on leaving Guanahaní are proposed by Varnhagen to have been Caicos, Planas, and Samana. But none of these are in sight from Mayaguana. Acklin cannot be the second island, because the course and distance to it is W.N.W. forty miles, while the course of Columbus from Guanahaní to his second island was south-west twenty miles. The third island of Columbus was in sight from his second, but Long Island is not in sight from Acklin Island. Mayaguana meets none of the requirements, and therefore cannot be the landfall.

The most careful and elaborate monograph on the landfall of Columbus was written by the late Captain G. V. Fox, Assistant Secretary of the United States Navy.* He had himself visited the Bahamas, and his memoir bears evidence of deep and scholarly research. Captain Fox selected the small islet of Samana, called also Attwood's Cay, for the landfall of Columbus.

It is impossible that Samana can be Guanahaní, because both appear as separate islands alike on the maps of Juan de la Cosa and Herrera. Captain Fox tries hard to escape from the evidence of the maps. He appeals to map-makers of the seventeenth century and later, whose evidence is of no value against Juan de la Cosa and Herrera. He suggests that the Samana on Herrera's map was an inside island, one of the Crooked

* Report of the Superintendent of the United States Geodetic Survey, Appendix No. 18. "An Attempt to Solve the Problem of the First Landing-place of Columbus in the New World," by Captain G. V. Fox, Assistant Secretary of the Navy, 1861–66 (Washington, 1882), pp. 346–411. Republished in an epitomised form in the "Magazine of American History."

P9-98

Island group while the present Samana was Guanahani But Crooked Island is called Someto by Juan de la Cosa. Xumeto by Herrera, evidently the same as Samoete, while Samana appears outside, in its present place. Then he attempts to identify the rocks east of Samana, called Triangula on the map of Herrera, with Watling Island He has found "Triangulo or Watling" on a map of 1730 in Charlevoix, by D'Anville, and on Jeffery's Atlas of 1794 But Triangulo, as the name implies, means three islets or rocks, not one island like Watling It clearly represents the rocks to the eastward of Samana

Samana is 8¼ miles long by 1½ broad, with no lagoon in the centre, and the eastern end terminates in a long point, so that there was no east side to explore This is extremely unlike the description of Guanahani by Columbus. Samana, however, has a reef Fox makes Crooked Island the second island of Columbus, and Long Island the third But Long Island is not visible from Crooked Island, while the third island of Columbus was visible from the second Approaching the south end of Long Island from Crooked Island, Columbus could not see that the former was twenty leagues long. But he approached the south end of Long Island from the north Indeed, none of the requirements of the case are met, with Samana as the landfall.

Watling Island is identified as Guanahani by the learned Muñoz, by Admiral Becher in his "Landfall of Columbus," by Professor Oscar Peschel of Augsburg, by Mr. Major in the second edition of his "Select Letters of Columbus," by Lieutenant J B Murdoch of the United States Navy, and by Don Juan Ignacio de

Pg-99

Armas in his elaborate article published in *El Pais*, a periodical of Havanna, in 1889.

On the map of Herrera the fifth outer island of the Bahama group, counting from the north, is Guanahaní On a modern chart the fifth outer island, counting from the north, is Watling Island, which, on the evidence of Herrera's map, is thus identified as the landfall of Columbus.

17th century names

The Bahama Islands, or several of them, received names from the buccaneers of the seventeenth century, some of which found their way into our charts. That of Watling, no doubt, came from a famous buccaneer of that name, when the Bahamas were frequented by those worthies. In 1681 John Watling was elected a leader of the buccaneers in the Pacific, and he was killed in the same year, while leading an attack on Arica in Peru His connection with the Bahamas must have been at an earlier period of his career.

Watling Island is in 74° 28′ W longitude, and the south-east point is in 23° 55′ S It is thirteen miles long and from five to seven broad, so that it may be called a pretty good size ("bien grande"), and at the same time only an "Isleta." Guanahaní was flat, so is Watling Island, except that there is a hill 140 feet high, which would not, however, be visible from the anchorage of Columbus. Guanahaní had a large lagoon in the centre, so has Watling Island Watling Island also has several smaller lagoons and ponds, "muchas aguas," as Columbus says But the water is brackish, and Columbus could not fill up with water until he reached Fernandina, the third island Guanahaní was surrounded with a reef; so is Watling Island. The southern part of the east side of Guanahaní trended N N E; so does the

southern part of the east side of Watling Island On this eastern side Guanahani had a narrow spit of land, like an island, but not one, forming a harbour; so has Watling Island There is no requirement in the description of Guanahani or San Salvador which is not fully met by Watling Island

The Journal tells us that the Admiral took the boats to see the side of the island round the east point, where the coast trended N.N.E To have done this he must have started from a point on the south coast to the westward of the east point His anchorage must, therefore, have been on the south coast of the island, sheltered from the north-east trade, which was blowing fresh, by the south-east point. This is Mr Major's argument, and it seems conclusive. Mr. Major was thus the first to indicate with accuracy the first anchorage of Columbus in the New World.

Columbus sailed twenty miles south-west from Guanahani to his second island, which he named Santa Maria de la Concepcion. Rum Cay is twenty miles south-west from Watling Island. Rum Cay is therefore Santa Maria de la Concepcion. The third island was in sight from the second. Long Island is in sight from Rum Cay, consequently the third island, or Fernandina, must be Long Island. Admiral Becher and Mr. Major follow Columbus quite correctly to Rum Cay, but here they lose the track through a mistranslation. Columbus said: "As I saw another island to the west I clewed up the sails, having gone all that day until night, for I could not otherwise have reached the west point, where I anchored at sunset." * Becher's translation is, "As

* "Y como desta isla vide otra mayor al Oueste, cargue las velas por andar todo aquel dia hasta la noche, porque aun no pudiere haber

from the island I saw another to the westward, *I made sail, continuing on until night*, for as yet I had not arrived at the western cape." This interpretation caused great confusion in Admiral Becher's theory. Instead of remaining with sails clewed up at the second island, Columbus is sent westward all night, until he reaches Exuma Island. Having got him so many miles off his course, Becher and Major, at the cost of some violent treatment of the text of the journal, get Columbus back on his course again at the south end of Long Island, and then continue on the right route to Cuba.

One of the most recent essays on the landfall of Columbus and on his route through the Bahamas was written by Lieutenant J. B. Murdoch of the United States Navy, and was published in 1884.* Lieutenant Murdoch had the advantage of all the research and argument which had been devoted to the subject by his predecessors. If they did not establish their own theories they were quite successful in confuting those of their opponents. Lieutenant Murdoch made good use of his advantage, and in tracing out the route he alone has succeeded in meeting all the requirements of the journal of Columbus.

The method of Lieutenant Murdoch is to trace the route of Columbus backwards from Cuba. Columbus left the Islas de Arena at sunrise on the 27th of October, and saw the land of Cuba before nightfall, having then run seventeen leagues S.S.W. In making this

andado al cabo de Oueste, y cuasi al poner del sol saigi acerca del dicho cabo" (Navarrete, 1 p. 25)

"Cargue las velas" is a technical expression for clewing up the sails (*Diccionario Marítimo Español por Lorenzo*, Madrid, 1864) Becher thought "Cargue las velas" meant "I made sail"

* "Proceedings of the Naval Institute," Annapolis, April 1884, pp 449-486.

run he was crossing a strong current that sets to the W.N.W along the north coast of Cuba. Allowing it an average strength of two miles an hour, the bearing of his anchorage at sunrise would have been north-east, and the distance at sunset fifty-eight miles. The coast of Cuba was then in sight, and not more than twenty miles off. This would make the point reached in Cuba seventy-five miles north-east from the anchorage at sunrise. Columbus says that this anchorage was on the south side of his Islas de Arena, which were seven or eight islets extending north and south, while the water was shallow for five or six leagues on the southern side of the islands. The Ragged Island chain answers to this description, and is seventy-five miles from the Cuban coast. This places Columbus at anchor south of the Ragged Island chain, which he named Islas de Arena on the morning of the 27th of October.

The course from Isabella, the fourth island, to Islas de Arena is stated to have been W.S.W., and the distance from Cape Verde, the southern end of Long Island, to the point at which the Islas de Arena were sighted, was fifty-six miles W. ½ S. The distance of the islands, when first seen, is given as five leagues. The position at sunset on the 24th was, therefore, about sixty-five miles E. ¼ N. from Isabella. This position would be south-east from Cape Verde, and W.S.W. from the rocky islet at the northern end of Isabella. These bearings point to Long Island as the second island, or Fernandina, and to Bird Rock at the north end of Crooked Island as the rocky islet at the north end of Isabella. Crooked and Fortune Islands are thus identified as the Isabella of Columbus and the Samoete of the natives.

Long Island meets all the requirements of Fernandina It trends N.N.W and S S E, and is twenty leagues long It has a shallow harbour on the east coast, called Clarence Harbour, with two entrances, and part of its east coast trends nearly east and west

Both the fourth island, Isabella, and the second island, Santa Maria de la Concepcion, are described as being some leagues east of Fernandina, Isabella being east of its southern, and Santa Maria of its northern end Isabella has been shown to be Crooked Island which is some leagues east of the south end of Long Island. Rum Cay must, therefore, be Santa Maria de la Concepcion, which is some leagues east of the northern end of Long Island.

The second island of Columbus is said to be five leagues (a misprint for miles) long north and south, and ten leagues (miles) east and west * Rum Cay is five miles by ten miles Columbus tells us twice that the third island was in sight from the second Long island is in sight from Rum Cay This is not the case, as regards the second and third islands, in any of the other theories

SANTA MARIA de la CONCE ON

* Santa Maria de la Concepcion was twenty-one miles south-east from San Salvador Rum Cay is twenty-one miles south-east from the anchorage at the south-east point of Watling Island, which is thus identified as the San Salvador of Columbus, or Guanahani

The landfall is thus found by tracing the route of Columbus backwards from Cuba, and we are conducted

* The same error in putting leagues for miles occurs in the journal on December 21, 1492 Columbus was at the bay of Acul on the north side of Hayti The statement is there made—"the distance from the entrance to the bottom is about five leagues." It is really about five miles

to Watling Island, which resembles the description given of Guanahani by Columbus in every particular, and answers the requirement for Guanahani on the map of Herrera.

Watling Island is proved to be Guanahani, and is the true departure from which alone the requirements of the journal of Columbus are fully complied with. On leaving San Salvador (Guanahani), Columbus sailed south-west seven leagues to the second island. This course and distance brought him to Rum Cay. As it was dark before the island was reached, he stood off and on, and was carried some distance by the current. It took him all next day to reach the west point of Rum Cay, where he clewed up his sails and anchored at sunset. The third island of Columbus was in sight from the second. Long Island is in sight from Rum Cay. The course steered after leaving the second island is not precisely mentioned, but it is clearly indicated. He had heard of an island called Samoete where there was gold, and that it was some distance to the south. He therefore shaped a southerly course ("tocaba de sur"), making as much southing as light variable winds would permit. He sailed down the east side of Long Island during all the afternoon of the 16th, and all night. This is quite clear, as he could not otherwise have ascertained that it was twenty leagues in length, which is correct. On the morning of the 17th he anchored about two leagues south of Clarence Harbour. Long Island is therefore Fernandina, the third island of Columbus. The Admiral weighed at noon on the 17th, and as there was a foul wind for Samoete, he went north for two leagues to Clarence Harbour, which he describes correctly as a

shallow harbour with two entrances. Later in the afternoon he examined the part of Long Island coast beyond Clarence Harbour, which trends east and west for a few miles. The wind then veered to the north, and he steered E S E and south-east during the night, anchoring at Cape Verde, the south point of Long Island, on the morning of the 18th.

On the 19th Columbus steered easterly in search of Samoete, there being no land in sight. The ships made the land at about noon at a rocky islet off the northern extremity. The Admiral describes it so accurately as to leave no doubt that his rocky islet is Bird Island, off Crooked Island. The Cabo Hermoso of Columbus is the present Fortune Hill. The remark of the Admiral that Cabo Hermoso appeared to be on a separate island from Samoete, with another small island between, exactly coincides with the modern chart. The fourth island of Columbus, or Isabella, is identified with Crooked and Fortune Islands. Islas de Arena are identified with the Ragged Group by the bearings and distances from Cuba as well as from Crooked Island.

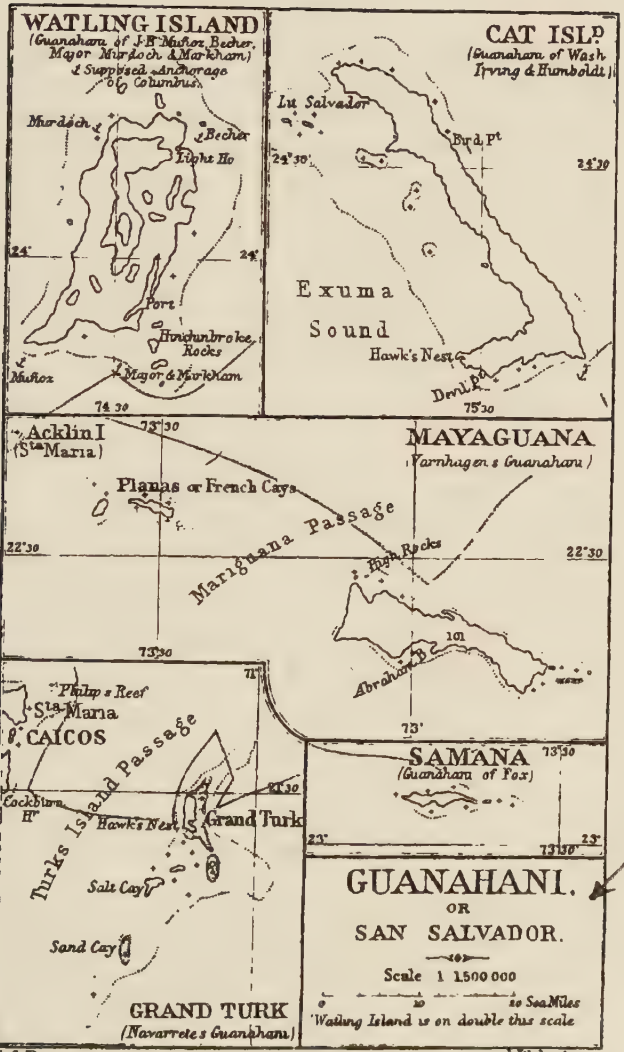
It will be seen that the evidence for Watling Island having been the landfall of Columbus is overwhelming. It answers to every requirement and every test, whether based on the Admiral's description of the island itself, on the courses and distances thence to Cuba, or on the evidence of early maps. Out of the twenty-four requirements taken from the Journal of Columbus, Watling Island fully complies with all, Turks Island complies with two—the lagoon and the reef, Samana with one —the reef, Mayaguana with none, Cat Island (wrongly called San Salvador) with none.

Pg-106 ** First landfall of Columbus in the New World?

The question of the first landfall of Columbus in the New World is so interesting that a full discussion of the various theories respecting it is worth the needful attention. For we are able to reach a final and satisfactory conclusion, and our time is not therefore wasted.

COURSE OF COLUMBUS FROM GUANAHANI TO CUBA

We have the satisfaction of being able to look back on that momentous event in the world's history with the certainty that we know the exact spot. When the great discoverer sprang from the boat, with the standard waving over his head, it was the shore at the south-east



E G R

G Philip & Son

Pg-107

angle of Watling Island where his feet first pressed the ground of the New World, and where his knees first made their impress when he offered up thanks for the achievement of the great work of which he was the chosen instrument.

Pg-108

CHAPTER VI

DISCOVERY OF THE NEW WORLD.

Oct. 28, 1492 A
Entered Cuban River.

On Sunday, the 28th of October, the Admiral entered a river of Cuba, where there was good anchorage, clear of all dangers. It was a land of enchantment. The shores were lined with beautiful trees, with flowers and fruit and all different from anything they had ever seen before, while birds of all kinds sang sweetly among the branches. Columbus observed a great number of palm trees, which were different from those he had seen on the coast of Guinea. The leaves were very large, and were used for thatching the houses, two of which were visited by the Admiral. The inhabitants fled, and he allowed nothing to be taken away. There were fishing nets and lines and various ornaments. Proceeding up the river in his boat, he was enchanted with the beauty of the scenery. The interior appeared to contain high mountains, and he compared it to Sicily. The vessels were anchored under a height which reminded the Admiral of the "Peña de los Enamorados," near Granada. He described it as two hills, and on the summit of one there was a rock, which looked like a mosque at a distance. The depth of the river at its mouth was twelve *brazas*, and it was wide enough for a vessel to beat out. Puerto Naranjo is the only port on this part of the coast of Cuba which answers to the description. It

THE WEST INDIES.
COLUMBUS

Pg-109

has a depth of twelve fathoms at the entrance, is wide enough for a small vessel to beat out under sail, and there are two hills rising from the shore, one of which is called "Loma del Templo," because another rock rises up on its summit Puerto Naranjo is then the first anchorage of Columbus on the coast of Cuba, to which he gave the name of San Salvador.

On the 29th the expedition weighed, and proceeded along the coast to the westward, passing the mouth of a river which was named "Rio de la Luna." The Admiral understood from the Guanahaní guides that there was a city ruled over by a king to the westward, and he judged, from the description in the letter of Toscanelli, that he was approaching the dominions of the Grand Khan

Sailing westward the Admiral came to the largest river he had yet seen, which he named "Rio de Mares" Here he communicated with the land, and found it to be fertile and well wooded Houses of considerable size were scattered about, which contained small birds kept as pets, and many figures carved in wood. After proceeding on the same course for fifteen leagues, Columbus named a point of land covered with palm-trees the "Cabo de Palmas" At this juncture Pinzon reported that the Guanahaní guide on board the *Pinta* was understood to say that there was a river beyond the point, and thence to the city called Cuba was four days' journey; also that the king of that city was at war with another king named Cami, whose city was called Fara Pinzon further suggested that Cami was really the Grand Khan mentioned in the letter of Toscanelli The squadron beat up against a foul wind for some time, but on the 1st of November the Admiral returned to "Rio de Mares"

Pg-110

Two of the observations for latitude, taken by Columbus with his quadrant, are recorded by Las Casas in his abstract on the 30th of October and the 2nd of November. Las Casas gives the result at 42° N.; but he adds that there must have been an error in copying from the original manuscript. For the latitude found by Columbus must have been about 22° N. Navarrete offers a strange and quite inadmissible explanation of the mistake. He says that the quadrants of those days measured the altitude double, and that therefore the latitude came out double. The quadrants of those days certainly did nothing of the kind, and if they had made the altitude double the resulting latitude would not have been double. The explanation is much more simple. The clerk who copied the document mistook 2 for 4.

When the people got accustomed to the ships, and found that one of their number had been on board and had returned without hurt, several canoes came round the *Santa Maria* with balls and skeins of cotton. The Admiral ordered them to be given to understand that what he sought was gold, the word for which was thought to be *nucay* in their language. He believed that he was now about a hundred leagues from the cities of Zaiton and Quinsay, mentioned in the letter of Toscanelli. He resolved to send an embassy to the city called Cuba to gather more intelligence from the king respecting the dominions of the Grand Khan. According to Las Casas the name given to Martin Pinzon was not that of a city, but of a province called Cubanacan, near the centre of the island, which was rich in gold mines. *Nacan* is a word in the language of the islanders meaning the middle, and *Cuba* is territory or province—"the central province." The Admiral selected for the duty of attempting

NUCAY" MEANS "GOLD"

to reach the supposed city a seaman named Rodrigo de Jerez, a native of Ayamonte, who had been on the coast of Guinea, together with a converted Jew named Luis de Torres, who had been a servant of the Governor of Murcia, and could speak Arabic and other Eastern tongues. They were to be absent for six days. They were accompanied by two Indians, one of whom had been brought from Guanahaní, and the other was a native of Rio de Mares.

The anchorage was in a large basin formed by the mouth of the river, with deep water and a good beach clear of rocks and stones. The Admiral therefore took this opportunity for careening his ships and cleaning their bottoms, heaving them down one at a time so as to guard against treachery. But the people were very gentle and friendly, and numberless questions were asked them respecting the country and its products, the existence of spices, and the locality of gold mines. Their answers were very imperfectly understood, as there had been no time to acquire any knowledge of the language; and the stories about men with one eye, and others with dogs' noses were, no doubt, the imaginative interpretations of unintelligible signs.

On the 6th of November the envoys returned, and reported that they had marched twelve leagues and had reached a place where there were fifty houses and about a thousand inhabitants, for a large number lived in one house. The Spaniards were received with great ceremony, and were very hospitably treated. They saw many people on the road, and observed that the men always had a half-burnt roll of leaves in their mouths which they smoked. These rolls were made of the dried leaves of a certain plant. They lighted it at one end, and drew the

smoke into their mouths at the other, which caused a drowsy feeling, and prevented the smoker from becoming fatigued. They called these rolls of dried leaves *tabucos*. This was the first occasion on which Europeans became acquainted with the fragrant weed. We are not told whether Rodrigo de Jerez and the converted Jew tried an experiment and smoked cigars themselves, or whether the habit was not acquired by Europeans until afterwards. But the discovery of tobacco was one of the direct results of the first voyage of Columbus.

From his own observations, as well as from the reports of the envoys, the Admiral came to the conclusion that the land was exceedingly fertile, producing a great number of fruits and vegetables previously unknown, and that the people were innocent and well disposed, and ready to be converted to Christianity. They wore no clothing of any kind, but had great quantities of cotton, and slept in nets suspended from the trees called *hamacas*.

On the 12th of November the Admiral sailed from Rio de Mares to find an island where he understood there was much gold, called Ibibeque, to reach which the course was supposed to be E.S.E.

In reporting on the products of Cuba, Columbus mentions a quantity of mastiche at the Rio de Mares, the trees being like those described by Pliny. The Admiral had seen them in the island of Chios, hitherto the only source of supply, where they yielded, if his memory did not mislead him, a sum of 50,000 ducats at 9s. 2d. He was probably correct, for in the next century the value of the mastiche exported from Chios was 30,000 ducats. The resin ducts are in the bark of the stems and branches, and Columbus caused many trees

to be tapped in Cuba to ascertain whether they exuded in the same way as at Chios This is one out of many examples of the closeness with which the great discoverer observed all natural objects which surrounded him in his new discovery, of his attention to details, and of the readiness with which he brought the knowledge he had acquired in his numerous voyages to bear on the matter before him It was at Rio de Mares that the Admiral detained six Indian youths on board with the object of taking them home with him, teaching them the Spanish language, and instructing them in the Christian faith. After working to the eastward for two days against light winds, the exploring squadron approached the western end of Cuba, having passed a great number of islands covered with trees. On the 17th two of the captive youths made their escape. The foul wind obliged the Admiral to keep his ships on a bowline, and to make long stretches to the northward, in order to gain any headway to the east At this time Martin Pinzon, being on board the *Pinta*, and being able to outsail the Admiral, parted company in order to visit the island yielding gold, of which his native guides had told him, thus basely deserting his comrades.

The *Santa Maria* bore up and anchored in a harbour which was named Santa Catalina, now called Cayo Moa, near the east end of Cuba. Here the trees grew straight and to a great height, which enabled the *Niña* to be supplied with a new mizen-mast The Admiral reported the country to be exceedingly beautiful, with rich vegetation and abundant supplies of pure and excellent water. On the 5th of December he reached Punta de Maise, the eastern extremity of Cuba, and

standing across the channel, the explorers soon sighted the high land of Haiti.

The *Niña* was sent ahead, and anchored in the harbour of St. Nicholas Mole, at the north-western extremity of Haiti. The mountains in the background were lofty and rugged, but the intervening land seemed to be less thickly wooded than in Cuba: small clumps and single trees were scattered over the green open slopes, and it reminded them more of their own homes than any land they had yet seen. The *Santa Maria* followed the *Niña*, but it was late next day before she came to an anchor. The present harbour of St. Nicholas Mole at first received the name of Puerto Maria from Columbus, which he changed to St. Nicholas. Points of land to the east were named "Cabo del Estrella," "Cabo del Elefante," and "Cabo del Cinquin," and the island off the north coast received the name of Tortuga. All the natives concealed themselves, so the Admiral left St. Nicholas on the 7th of December, and encountering a northerly gale, he took refuge in a bay sheltered by the island of Tortuga, which he named "Puerto de la Concepcion." Here the open plains still more reminded them of home, and the island received the name of Española. At this place some Spaniards, who were taking a stroll on shore, ran down a native girl after a long chase and brought her on board. The Admiral caused her to be treated with kindness, loaded with presents, and returned to her people. In this way communication was established with the Indians, and they soon took courage to surround the ship with their canoes and come on board.

The two little vessels had moved to a port a short distance to the eastward, and in consequence of the

friendly intercourse with the people, the Admiral named it Puerto de la Paz He was delighted alike with the beauty of the scenery and with the innocence and gentleness of the natives. The 18th of December was the Annunciation, and was celebrated by a salute from the lombards and a display of flags. At dinner-time the chief of that part of the island came on board with many attendants, and seated himself at the table under the poop where the Admiral was dining He received several presents, and departed with demonstrations of pleasure and friendship. It was found that the name for a chief or king, in the native language, was *cacique* In an anchorage, now called "Bahia de Acul," a little further to the east, the natives came in crowds and presented provisions of all kinds, treating their visitors with the greatest frankness and cordiality. Columbus was filled with joy and delight at his new discoveries He exclaimed, "I had navigated the sea for twenty-three years, and had seen all the east and west, and from England in the north to Guinea in the south, but in all those parts I had never found so perfect a land as this, nor such harbours"

Understanding from the natives that there was much gold on islands to the eastward, the Admiral continued to shape a course in that direction, and on the 22nd a large canoe came alongside with an invitation from a chief named Guacanagari to visit his country. The ships were soon surrounded by 120 canoes, all loaded with bread, fish, and fresh water in earthen jars, and over 500 natives swam off, although the ships were nearly a league from the shore. The Admiral was informed that there was a great quantity of gold at a place called Cibao, which he mistook for Cipango.

Proceeding with little wind on December the 24th from the harbour of Santo Tomas, or Acul, towards Punta Santa, the Admiral kept a look out on deck until 11 o'clock in the first watch. He had had no sleep for two days and a night, so he went below, leaving the deck in charge of the man at the helm. As it was quite calm the man intrusted the tiller to a boy and went to sleep, a proceeding which the Admiral had strictly forbidden throughout the voyage, whether it was calm or not. The orders were that the helm was not to be intrusted to the boys on any pretence whatever. A current carried the *Santa Maria* on to a sandbank at about two in the morning, and she touched so lightly that it was scarcely perceptible. The boy felt the rudder touch and heard the rush of the sea along the ship's side. He cried out, and the Admiral was on deck in a moment. Columbus had piloted the ship past many dangers from rocks and sandbanks during the previous days and nights, and if he had not been fairly worn out with fatigue and want of sleep the disaster would not have happened. The current continued to force the ship further on to the bank, and she gradually heeled over. She became deeply imbedded in the sand. It was the master's watch and he ought to have been on deck. When he came up the Admiral ordered him to lay out an anchor to haul the ship off. The boat was launched over the stern, and the master and others got into her. Columbus thought they were going to obey his orders, instead of which they pulled off to the *Niña*, which was half a league away. They were not allowed on board, and came back; but meanwhile the opportunity was lost. The Admiral tried every other plan. Masts were cut away and the ship was lightened, but all

was of no avail. If the anchor had been laid out according to the Admiral's orders, the ship would probably have been saved Diego de Arana and Pedro Gutierrez were sent to the chief, Guacanagari, whose settlement was a few miles distant, to ask for help. Large canoes were immediately despatched, which assisted in landing the stores and provisions and everything of value during the following day. The warm-hearted chief placed two large houses at the Admiral's disposal, and was anxious to assist him in every way in his power It was clear that the little *Niña* could not possibly take the crew of the *Santa Maria* as well as her own across the Atlantic, and the necessity for forming a settlement became apparent. The Admiral resolved to build a fort, store it with a year's provisions, and leave in it some artificers and as many of the men as desired to stay, with the ship's boat. As the wreck took place on Christmas Day, the fort was to be called "La Navidad." Guacanagari promised that plenty of gold should be brought from Cibao, and that more should be collected during the Admiral's absence and given to the Spaniards in the fort.

Columbus wrote of the chief and his people with warm gratitude. "He and all his people wept for us. They are a loving race and without covetousness, well disposed in all things; and I assure your Highnesses that I do not believe there is a better people or a better land in the world. They love their neighbours as themselves, and their conversation is gentle and kindly and always cheerful. They go as naked as they were born, both men and women, yet they have very good customs. Their chief keeps marvellous state, and has a manner so composed that it is pleasant to see it. They have good

memories, like to see everything, and inquire what each article is, and for what it is used." Columbus understood that the province was called Caribata, and that the native name of the island, which he had called Española, was Bohio. According to Las Casas, the name of the province was Marien.

On the 26th Guacanagari visited the Admiral on board the *Niña*, and afterwards entertained him at dinner on shore with cassava bread, yams, game, and other viands. The meal was not hurried, and Columbus was surprised at the cleanliness and good manners of the chief while at table, and at the way in which he carefully wiped his hands afterwards with certain herbs. They exchanged many presents, and the native chief proved himself to be a true and faithful friend. He ruled over a happy and contented people, and the only drawbacks to their existence were the attacks of a cruel race of savages called Caribas. The Admiral promised that the sovereigns of Spain would order him to subdue and punish these invaders.

The fort of Navidad was completed, and it was arranged that forty-four souls should remain behind—thirty-four belonging to the *Santa María*, and ten to the *Niña*. Diego de Arana, the cousin of the Admiral's wife, Beatriz Enriquez, and his steadfast friend, was to be Governor; with Rodrigo de Escobedo, the secretary, and Diego Gutierrez, as his lieutenants. They were introduced to the *cacique* Guacanagari, who undertook to supply all their wants. All the articles for barter were left with them, biscuits to last for a year, wine, ammunition, and the ship's boat. Among those who remained at Navidad were the Englishman Alard (Tallarte de Lajes), and the Irishman from Galway.

SANTA MARIA SOME OF CREW CAME HOME ON THE NIÑA.

The Admiral, master, pilot, and fifteen of the crew of the *Santa Maria*, returned home in the *Niña*. Out of her own crew of eighteen ten remained at Navidad, so that twenty-six people were crowded on board this little caravel of forty tons, besides several natives. Columbus bade farewell to those who remained behind, strongly enjoining friendly treatment of the natives, and the preservation of discipline, and promising to return in the following year. Guacanagari parted with the Admiral most unwillingly.

1/4/1493 SAILED FOR HOME ON THE NIÑA.

The *Niña* sailed on the 4th of January 1493, and proceeded along the coast to the eastward, giving the name of "Monte Cristi" to a high mountain on the coast having the form of a tent; and a point twenty-four miles further east was named "Cabo del Becerro." There were beautiful undulating plains along the coast, and behind the ranges of mountains rose one above the other into the clouds. In the afternoon of the 6th the mast-head man, who was keeping a sharp look-out for rocks, reported the *Pinta* coming down to them, with the wind aft, and all sail set. The Admiral returned to Monte Cristi with the *Pinta* in company, and anchored. Martin Alonzo Pinzon then came on board the *Niña* to pay his respects. He excused his desertion by saying that it was caused by reasons over which he had no control, and that it was not intentional. The Admiral was not deceived. He knew that Pinzon had parted company in order to obtain the gold of which he had heard, and then return home first. He had utterly failed, and now came back to his chief, who could no longer trust him. But for the good of the expedition Columbus refrained from fully expressing his thoughts. On the 7th the men were sent on shore for wood and water, and the vessels were caulked and refitted.

MARTIN PINZON COULD NOT BE trusted, but Columbus REMAINED SILENT.

P9-120

NINA + PINTA MOVE OUT AGAIN ON 1/9/1493.

MERMAIDS

The *Pinta* and *Niña*, once more in company, weighed from Monte Cristi on the 9th of January; and, when sailing eastward, three syrens or mermaids were seen, which rose well out of the sea but the Admiral remarked that they were not so beautiful as they are described, though in other respects they had a human form. He added that he had seen others on the coast of Manegueta, in Guinea. The syrens of Columbus are the dugongs which are found on the west coast of Africa; but their cogeners, the manatis, though still met with in the great South American rivers, have disappeared from the sea that surrounds Española Their resemblance to human beings, when rising in the water, must have been very striking. They have small rounded heads, and cervical vertebræ which form a neck, enabling the animal to turn its head about. The fore-limbs also, instead of being pectoral fins, have the character of the arm and hand of the higher mammalia. These peculiarities, and their very human way of suckling their young, holding it by the fore-arm, which is movable at the elbow-joint, suggested the idea of mermaids or syrens *

Still sailing eastward they reached the mouth of a river to which the Admiral gave the name of "Rio de Gracia," where the *Pinta* had already been, while separated from her consorts, Pinzon hoping to collect gold. He had seized four men and two girls from among the natives by force; but the Admiral ordered them to be clothed, released, and sent back to their homes. He had himself caused some natives to be taken, because he considered it to be necessary for the King's service, but

* See supplementary note on the dugong, by Mr. Delmar Morgan, in the "Voyage of Legaat," edited by Captain P. Oliver (Hakluyt Society, 1891, ii. p. 370)

he would not allow this to be done indiscriminately and without urgent cause Leaving this anchorage at midnight on the 11th they passed a high mountain, and as its summit was hidden by fleecy clouds, the Admiral named it "Monte de Plata." It was here that a monastery of Dominicans was afterwards built, in which Las Casas began to write his "History of the Indies," in the year 1527 * Columbus had now resolved to make the best of his way back to Spain, to report the unprecedented results of his memorable expedition.

On the 12th they were sailing along the north coast of the peninsula of Samana, at the eastern end of Española. Reaching the eastern point, it received the name of "Cabo del Enamorado," while a loftier and grander headland beyond reminded the Admiral of Cape St. Vincent in Portugal. Between them there was a magnificent bay, the Gulf of Samana, where the Admiral, who carefully studied all the prognostications of the almanacs, prudently anchored his two little vessels An eclipse of the sun was expected on the 17th, and the opposition of Jupiter with the conjunction of Mercury was believed in the old world to betoken heavy gales With such small vessels he thought it well to be cautious, and to remain in port until these planetary movements and their supposed consequences had passed away.

Sending a boat on shore, communication was opened with a very different people to those that had hitherto been encountered. The men at Samana were armed with bows and arrows, their faces stained black, and their hair adorned with parrots' feathers The Admiral judged them to be the Caribs of whom he had heard, who harassed and plundered the more peaceful race of

* Las Casas, iv p 254.

islanders, and were said to be eaters of human flesh One of these Caribs came on board, and told the Admiral that there was much *taob*, which was supposed to mean gold, in islands to the eastward, called Matinino and Goanin, but the man was very imperfectly understood Las Casas says that there were never any Caribs in Española A boat's crew went on shore afterwards to barter and, owing to some misunderstanding, there was a collision, resulting in the wounding of two natives and the flight of the rest. When the boat came off the Admiral said that it was well that these people should know the power of the white men, still the collision caused him some anxiety, lest it should give rise to a feeling of hostility against the settlers at Navidad. Next day some chiefs came on board, and received presents from the Admiral

MINOR CONFLICT

Both the caravels had been very indifferently caulked at Palos, and were making much water The Admiral therefore abandoned his intention of discovering the islands to the south-east, and resolved, in accordance with the wishes of his people, to shape a direct course for Spain. He calculated this course to be N E ¼ E., and weighing on the 16th of January he proceeded in that direction, continuing on the same course day after day The *Pinta* now delayed the *Niña* owing to her mizen-mast being sprung, and it was said that if Martin Pinzon had been as diligent in getting himself a new mizen-mast as he had been in his insubordinate and useless search after gold, they would have made a better passage home The temperature soon became cooler, and in the fine weather they succeeded in catching some fish, including an enormous shark. These additions to the larder were important, for the ordinary provisions

CAUGHT A SHARK AND FISH

were reduced to biscuits and wine. On the 3rd of February the Admiral observed that the pole star was as high in the heavens as it is at Cape St Vincent, but owing to the motion caused by the waves he could not take an altitude either with his quadrant or astrolabe. On the 7th the reckoning of the Admiral made them seventy-five leagues south of the island of Flores, those of the pilots being much further to the north and east. On the 12th the wind rose to a gale, with a heavy sea, and if the little caravel had not been very carefully repaired, through the Admiral's diligence, when on the coast of Española, she would probably have been lost. Next day there was a fearful sea, and the *Niña* lay to under bare poles until evening, when she began to run before it, showing the smallest rag of a sail. On the 14th the wind increased in violence, there was a terrific sea, and the frail boat was in great danger. Columbus ordered that lots should be prepared, consisting of beans shaken up in a cap, on one of which a cross was cut. All were to draw, and he who got the crossed bean was to vow a pilgrimage to Santa Maria de Guadaloupe, and to present a wax candle of five pounds weight to her shrine. Columbus himself was the first, and he drew the bean with a cross. They drew again for a pilgrimage to Santa Maria de Loreto, near Ancona in Italy, and the lot fell on a sailor of the port of Santa Maria near Cadiz, named Pedro de Villa. The Admiral promised to provide money for his journey if they were spared. Next they drew lots for who should watch for a night and have a mass said in the church of Santa Clara at Moguer. The lot again fell on the Admiral. Then the Admiral and all the crew made a joint vow that, at the first place where they landed, they would all

march in procession, in their shirts, to offer up thanksgiving prayers in a church under the invocation of our Lady.

They had given themselves up for lost. Owing to the provisions being nearly consumed, the boat was very crank, but the Admiral obviated this danger to some extent by causing the empty casks to be filled with salt water so as to serve as ballast, and he paid the closest attention to the helm. Still every moment seemed likely to be their last. Those who have seen a gale of wind with a heavy sea in the latitude of the Azores can imagine the critical position of a leaky little boat of forty tons like the *Niña* rising on the top of a huge Atlantic wave, then plunging into the trough, with the mountainous billows foaming around higher than her mast-head, then rising and plunging down again, the slightest inattention to the helm making destruction certain, while green seas washed over her fore and aft.

Columbus was filled with anxiety lest his great work should perish with him. The violent motion of the little vessel rendered it almost impossible to write, but he took a piece of parchment and noted down a brief account of his discoveries, earnestly praying that any one who found it would take it to the sovereigns of Spain. He wrapped the parchment in a waxed cloth, fastening it well, and headed the packet up in an empty cask. No one knew what was inside the cloth. All believed that their leader was performing some religious vow or act of devotion, which they did not understand. The cask was then thrown overboard. Columbus passed some time during the fury of the gale communing with his God, who had heretofore saved him in so many perils, and had allowed his loftiest aspiration to be ful-

filled. He strove to persuade himself that it was the Lord's will that he should be saved, believing that, in this great achievement of his life, he was an instrument in the hands of God. Still his heart sank within him when he reflected on the extreme danger of his position. He thought with anguish of his two little boys at school in Cordova, who would be left fatherless. But as he prayed hope prevailed over despondency, and when the wind changed to the west during the night he allowed himself to regain confidence in his destiny.

On the 15th of February the gale abated, but the sea still ran very high, and towards sunset land was sighted on the horizon. The pilots believed it to be the coast of Spain; but Columbus knew, from his careful reckoning, that it was one of the Azores. At sunset it was obscured by mist, but they hoped to reach it the next day. That night the Admiral, who had been on deck and without sleep since the 13th, took a little rest. He was suffering a good deal from his legs, which had been so long exposed to cold and wet, and from want of food, in common with the rest of the crew. On the 18th the *Niña* was anchored, and a boat being sent on shore, it was found that they had reached the island of Santa Maria, the most easterly of the Azores. The governor, who was named Juan de Castañeda, sent a friendly message to the Admiral, with a present of fresh provisions. Trusting implicitly in his good faith, the Admiral arranged that half the crew should go on shore, to perform their vow of marching in procession, in their shirts, to a chapel of our Lady. On their return he intended to go himself with the other half. But while the first half was engaged in prayer at a small chapel on shore, they were treacherously surrounded by an armed body

of Portuguese and taken prisoners. As the Admiral could not see the chapel from the point where the *Niña* was at anchor, he got under weigh when he found that the boat did not return and came opposite to the chapel. Then he saw his people surrounded, and armed men coming off in a boat to attack him. The governor was in the boat, but he would not come on board. Columbus told him who he was, that he held a commission from the sovereigns of Spain as their Admiral and Viceroy, that they were at peace with the King of Portugal, that the seizure of his people would not prevent him from proceeding on his voyage to Spain, and that the governor would surely be punished for his misconduct. Castañeda insolently replied that they were Portuguese and knew nothing of the sovereigns of Spain or their commissions. The weather was very threatening, and Columbus decided upon seeking better shelter at St. Michael's. He put to sea, but was unable to fetch St. Michael's, and returned to his former anchorage in the evening. Then some Portuguese came on board, including two priests. They were shown the royal commissions, and eventually the Admiral's people were released and allowed to come on board. On the 24th the *Niña* departed from this inhospitable island, and, after encountering very severe weather, she reached the Tagus on the 4th of March, and anchored at the entrance, off the village of Rastelo. A large Portuguese man-of-war was there, and the captain, named Bartolomè Diaz, went on board the *Niña* in an armed boat, and demanded that the Admiral should come with him and give an account of himself. The Admiral replied that he was the officer of the sovereigns of Castille, that he would give no account of himself, and that he would not leave his ship

except by force. Diaz then said that he might send the master of the *Niña*, but Columbus refused to allow either the master or any one on board to leave his ship in obedience to a Portuguese order. Diaz then moderated his tone, requested to be allowed to see the Admiral's commission, and offered any help in his power. Crowds of visitors came from Lisbon to see the ship during the two following days, and on the 8th Don Martin de Noronha arrived with an invitation from the King of Portugal. Columbus proceeded to the Valle del Paraiso, nine leagues from Lisbon, where the court then was, and had an interview with João II., who received him very courteously. He was the guest of the Prior of Crato, and remained at court until the 12th, when he took leave of the King, and returned on board the *Niña*. On the 13th the Admiral got under weigh, and left the Tagus. He rounded Cape St. Vincent before sunset on the 14th, and at sunrise on the 15th of March he was off the bar of Saltes. At noon he reached the port of Palos, from which he had sailed on the 3rd of August in the previous year, having been absent seven months and twelve days. The *Pinta* had made the port of Bayona, on the west coast of Galicia, after the gale abated, and proceeded thence to Palos, where she arrived on the same day as the *Niña*. Martin Alonzo Pinzon is said to have died a few weeks after he landed.

3/14/1493

The *Niña* must have been seen off the bar of Saltes for some hours before she anchored in the river. All the inhabitants were on the bank to receive the great discoverer when he landed. We may be sure that in front of the crowd were his constant friends from La Rabida, Juan Perez and Alonzo de Marchena. Amidst the ringing of bells, salutes from the lombards, and the

cheers of the people, the Admiral went straight to the old church of St George, the patron saint of his native city, to offer up thanks for his delivery from so many dangers. Afterwards the friars conducted him to La Rabida, where *Te Deum* was sung by the brotherhood in presence of the Admiral, his pilots and officers, and the principal inhabitants of Palos. Next day the ten Indians were landed, six from Guanahani and four from Cuba; together with the animals, plants, and curious objects of all kinds that had been brought home. One Indian had died on the very day that the *Niña* arrived, and three others were too ill to travel further than Palos. The Admiral, after resting for a few days with his good friends at La Rabida, proceeded to Seville towards the end of March

The discovery of America was one of the most important events in the world's history, and the deepest interest will always be felt in the conduct of the discoverer, and in the details of the voyage Columbus had prepared himself for his great work during twenty years of study and of practical labour. He had known poverty and adversity, and had learnt patience and prudence, forethought and consideration for others, in a severe school, while at the same time he acquired knowledge and experience. During the voyage he displayed the highest qualities of a commander. He alone was capable of conducting the ships across the Atlantic for the first time, of guiding their course, and of calming the anxieties of their crews To him alone is due the credit of having steered the little vessels clear of a thousand dangers, and of having brought two of them safely back. Having run down the trades on the way out, Columbus reflected that it would probably be impracticable to re-

turn on the same parallels. With wonderful prevision he assumed that there must be a complement to the trades in higher latitudes. He therefore adopted a northerly course, and discovered the region of westerlies. He not only found the New World, but also pointed out the way to go and the way to return. To achieve all this a man was needed who was possessed of profound knowledge acquired by years of study and experience, of untiring watchfulness, and of those unerring provisions which genius of a high order alone produces. There was only one such man in that age.

The first account of the voyage was contained in the letter written to his friend Luis de Santangel, the treasurer of Aragon, by the Admiral himself for the information of Ferdinand and Isabella. It is dated on board the *Niña* on the 18th of February, off the island of Santa Maria, and a postscript announces her arrival in the Tagus on the 4th of March. The letter was despatched from Lisbon or possibly from Palos. It contains a brief account of the principal events of the voyage (1).

The journal of the voyage is an abstract, probably prepared by Las Casas, as the only copy in existence, which was published by Navarrete, is said to be in the bishop's handwriting. Unfortunately the original journal and the original charts are lost. The abstract is full, and the very words of the Admiral are occasionally quoted. Still the composition is not that of the Admiral, except where the quotations are specified, and he cannot be held responsible for any obvious errors especially as regards figures. There is reason for the opinion that Las Casas made his abstract from a copy, and he complains of the illegible handwriting more than once. We

Pg-130

must be thankful even for this abstract. It supplies us with a full and minute account of all the events of the voyage. It shows with what conscientious care the great discoverer recorded his proceedings, and with what

WESTERN PART OF THE MAP OF JUAN DE LA COSA

intelligence and interest he observed the natural objects that surrounded him in his New World. All were new to him, but he could compare them with analogous products seen in his numerous voyages, and draw useful

Pg-131

inferences. The fulness of his entries was due to the rapid working of a vivid imagination, as one thought followed another in quick succession through his well-stored brain. So that the journal is a mirror of the man. It shows his failings and his virtues. It records his lofty aims, his unswerving loyalty, his deep religious feeling, his kindliness and gratitude. It impresses us with his knowledge and genius as a leader, with his watchful care for his people, and with the redundancy of his imagination. Few can read the journal without a feeling of admiration for the marvellous ability and simple faith of the great genius whose mission it was to reveal the mighty secret of the ages.

NOTE

(1) *The First Letter announcing the Discovery of the New World*

Two manuscripts are in existence of the letter written by Columbus on board the *Niña*. One is at Simancas, and was first published by Navarrete from a copy prepared by the archivist Don Tomas Gonzalez in 1818. The other manuscript was found by Varnhagen at Valencia, and published there in 1858. The first is addressed to the "Escribano de Racion," the second to Gabriel Sanchez. The Valencia manuscript gives the date correctly. "Fecha en la carabela sobre la isla de Santa Maria 18 de Febrero 1493." The Simancas manuscript has "Fecha en la carabela sobre las islas de Canaria 15 de Febrero 1493." This proves that the Simancas document is a careless copy. Santa Maria, written "Stamaria," was read by the copyist as "Canaria," and 18 for 15. Detractors of Columbus have seized upon this date "Canaria" to suggest that he was either completely out in his reckoning, or that he was always careless. The journal proves that he was correct in his reckoning, and expected to make a landfall at the Azores, and the Valencia

Pg - 132

manuscript proves that he did not date the letter "Canaria," but "Santa Maria." So that this attempt to discredit the accuracy of the Admiral utterly fails.

The letter to the "Escribano de Racion" was printed at Seville in 1493, as has been proved by Asensio (i. 435), and this edition is of special interest, because it is the first printed account of the discovery of the new world. Only one copy is known to exist, now in the Ambrosian Library at Milan. A Latin version of the letter to Sanchez, by a Catalan named Leander de Cosco, was printed at Rome in 1493 by Stephen Plannck—four leaves in Gothic type. Another version was printed at Rome in the same year by Silber.

The "Escribano de Racion" was Luis de Santangel. But I incline to think that there was only one letter addressed to the "Escribano de Racion" without a name, and that the name of Sanchez got inserted by mistake, by some one who thought that he was "Escribano de Racion."

Pg 133

Welcomed home:

CHAPTER VII

RECEPTION OF THE NEWS.

Palm Sunday 1493

THE arrival of Columbus created a great sensation in Spain. One year had wrought a marvellous change. The needy enthusiast, ridiculed and insulted, was now Admiral of the Ocean Sea, Viceroy of the Western Indies, the observed of all observers. When he entered Seville by the populous suburb of Triana, on Palm Sunday, 1493, he was preceded by a well-equipped squadron of cavalry, which the Count of Cifuentes, who was the Queen's "Asistente" of Seville, had sent out to meet him. A procession was formed of servants carrying parrots and paroquets of beautiful plumage, spears and other arms, plumes and girdles, and many other wonderful curiosities, followed by the Indians, who attracted more attention than anything else. The Admiral was accompanied by Juan Niño, the master and part-owner of the *Niña*, by the pilots and several seamen, and by citizens who were old friends of the illustrious navigator, and had come out to meet him. Dense crowds thronged the streets; there was no window unoccupied, nor was there a place to be found vacant on the roofs as Columbus passed through the streets of Seville to his lodging in the house of the Count of Cifuentes. The Indians and the curiosities were lodged in a house near the arch-

Pg 133

way called "of the Images," at St Nicholas, where some favoured persons were allowed to examine them.

In that crowd there was a young man, about twenty years of age, to whose diligence, ability, and truthfulness the Admiral's memory owes almost everything. Bartolomè Las Casas was one of those who were admitted to see the curiosities. In after life he was the courageous defender of the poor Indians, an ardent ecclesiastic, and the most conscientious and truthful historian of that age. To Las Casas we owe the story of the early life of Columbus, the journal of the first voyage, the letter of Columbus describing the third voyage, and the account of this famous entry into Seville, of which he was an eyewitness.

Columbus had reported his arrival and the results of his voyage to the sovereigns of Spain, and waited for their reply at Seville. Nor did he omit to give an account of his discoveries to the aged astronomer at Florence, Paolo Toscanelli, to whose advice and suggestions he owed so much. Toscanelli must then have reached a great age, and it is pleasant to know that the illustrious navigator, in the midst of his triumphant reception, did not forget to gladden the heart of his venerable correspondent with the news that his advice had produced such glorious fruit.[1]

LETTER FROM KING & QUEEN

While the excitement at Seville caused by the arrival of Columbus was at its height, a special messenger arrived with a letter addressed "from the King and Queen to Don Cristoval Colon, their Admiral of the Ocean Sea, and Viceroy and Governor of the islands discovered in the Indies." It was dated from Barcelona on the 30th of March, and expressed their sense of the greatness of his services to God, to themselves, and to the

country. They told him that they considered it most important that his work should be continued, and that he should commence preparations for returning to his newly-discovered government, and they desired that he would come to their court with as much despatch as possible. They were anxious to receive a full account of his discoveries from his own lips

Columbus set out from Seville in the middle of April, and travelled by land to Barcelona, accompanied by Pedro Niño and the other members of the expedition, and by six of the Indians. The others were not well enough to leave Seville Enormous crowds assembled to see the Admiral pass through the towns on his road, and a grand reception was prepared for him at Barcelona As he approached the famous old capital of the Counts, a troop of splendidly-dressed cavaliers came out to meet the great discoverer, and conduct him to the presence of the sovereigns. Ferdinand and Isabella, with their only son, were lodged, during their residence at Barcelona, in the palace of the Bishop of Urgel, in the Calle Ancha. The building has long since disappeared, but it is here that the memorable reception probably took place The sovereigns were seated on thrones under a magnificent canopy with the young Prince Juan in a chair by the Queen's side, and were surrounded by nobles and ministers of state. But the arrival of Columbus was delayed by the dense crowd in the streets. He was preceded by the Indians, and by sailors of the *Niña*, carrying tropical fruits and various species of vegetable products, parrots, and many other birds with gorgeous plumage, and animals, including an enormous iguana five feet long, with huge spines along its back The six Indians carried spears and arrows, and wore golden ornaments

Columbus himself was distinguished by his stature, his snow-white hair, and his dignified and courteous bearing. Preceded by the mace-bearers of the city and the heralds of Catalonia, he was conducted to the presence. Ferdinand and Isabella, as if by a sudden and spontaneous impulse, rose to receive their Admiral, an unprecedented act of condescension. After kissing hands, he was invited to sit on a chair under the canopy, and to narrate the events of the voyage. Nobles, prelates, ministers, and pages stood around, and among the latter was Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo, the future historian. In words of moving eloquence Columbus related the anxieties of the voyage, the landing at Guanahaní, and the discovery of Cuba and Española. He described the magnificent scenery, the new and varied products, and the gentle character of the natives, and showed the sovereigns how God might be served, and their realms enriched, by a wise and judicious use of the new world his genius had presented to them. When he ceased to speak there was profound silence for some minutes. Then the sovereigns threw themselves on their knees, and returned thanks to God, the whole court following their example. A number of priests and choristers of the chapel royal entered the hall solemnly chanting the *Te Deum*, while the vast crowd outside sent up rounds and rounds of applause. It was a most impressive ceremony. At its conclusion the Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo conducted the Admiral to his lodging, to be his guest during his stay at Barcelona. On the following and several successive days Columbus had interviews with the sovereigns, lasting several hours. Active preparations were ordered to be commenced for a second expedition on a large scale, and negotiations were set

on foot with the Pope to secure the new possessions of Castile from molestation on the part of the King of Portugal.

It was resolved that Dr Bernardo de Carbajal, the Bishop of Cartagena, should be despatched on an embassy to the Pope, with a present of some of the first gold brought from the Indies, and instructions to represent the vast consequences to Christianity that were likely to accrue from the new discoveries. Pope Alexander VI was an Aragonese, and had been a subject of Ferdinand. It was found that Pope Martin V. had already conceded a Bull to the King of Portugal, giving that country the sovereignty from Cape Boyador to the East Indies; and the concession had been recognised by Spain in a treaty signed in 1479. Alexander VI., by a Bull dated May 4, 1493, made a still greater concession to Spain. In order that the possessions of Spain and Portugal might be clearly distinguished, the Pope drew a line over the ocean from the Arctic to the Antartic Pole, situated as regards longitude at a distance of one hundred leagues to the westward of the Azores. The Pope granted all lands that had been or might be discovered, to the westward of this line, to the sovereigns of Spain and their heirs for ever.

PAPAL BULLS

Columbus was treated with the highest distinction during his residence at Barcelona. He frequently rode out with the sovereigns and Prince Juan, and was always greeted with loud acclamations by the people. On the 3rd of May, when the Indians were baptized, the King and Prince stood as sponsors, and in many other ways favour was shown to the Admiral, and to all that concerned him. All the titles, honours, and precedence granted in the capitulation of Santa Fe were confirmed,

INDIANS BAPTIZED MAY 3, 1493

and he was further invested with the title of Captain-General of the fleet which was to be fitted out at Seville for the Indies, in accordance with a royal order of May 28, 1493. In recognition of his great and distinguished services and for perpetual memory of his achieve-

ARMS OF COLUMBUS

ment, he was granted a special coat-of-arms on the 20th of May. The shield is quarterly: first, a castle on a field *vert*; second a lion rampant *purpure* on a field *argent*, third, islands of the sea *or* on a field *azure*, and in the fourth, the assumed family arms of Colombo. Subse-

P9 - 139

quently five anchors *or* on a field *azure* were placed in the fourth quarter, and the family arms were removed to the middle base, in the same way as the pomegranate appears in the royal arms of Spain. A motto was allowed to encircle the shield as follows: "*Por Castilla é por Léon Nuevo Mundo halló Colon.*" but this was after the Admiral's death. Ferdinand also presented the Admiral with a splendid suit of Milanese armour, which is still preserved in the royal armoury at Madrid.

The anecdote of the egg is said to have reference to this period—"in Spain after he had discovered the Indies"—and although it was first told fifty years after the Admiral's death it may quite possibly be founded on fact. Benzoni* says: "Columbus being at a party with many noble Spaniards, where as was customary, the subject of conversation was the Indies, one of them undertook to say, 'Signor Cristoforo, even if you had not found the Indies, we should not have been devoid of a man who would have attempted the same that you did, here in our country of Spain, as it is full of great men, clever in cosmography and literature.' Columbus said nothing in answer to these words, but having desired an egg to be brought to him, he placed it on the table, saying, 'Gentlemen, I will lay a wager with any of you that you will not make this egg stand up as I will, naked, and without anything at all.' They all

* Girolamo Benzoni was born at Milan in 1510, and started for the New World when he was twenty-two. After fourteen years he returned home in 1556, and in 1565 he published his *Historia del Mondo Nuovo* at Venice, dedicated to Pius IV., second edition 1572. It was translated into English for the Hakluyt Society by Admiral Smyth, in 1857. See p. 17 of this translation for the anecdote of the egg.

tried, and no one succeeded in making it stand up. When the egg came round to the hands of Columbus, by beating it down on the table he fixed it, crushing a little of one end: wherefore all remained confused, understanding what he would have said, that after the deed is done everybody knows how to do it, and that they ought first to have sought for the Indies, and not laugh at him who had sought for it first, while they for some time had been laughing, and wondered at it as an impossibility."

No one was more deeply impressed with the greatness of the achievement, and with its far-reaching consequences, than Columbus himself. But far from giving rise to any feeling of pride, it caused in him a deep sense of his own unworthiness. He believed that he was the chosen instrument in the hand of God to fulfil His designs, and accomplish much that had been prefigured in the prophecies. His whole life was tinged with devotional feeling, and his imaginative mind turned to the prophetic books of the Old Testament and to the Apocalypse for words that foreshadowed the great events in which he was the chief actor. His heart overflowed with gratitude at the thought that he, the humble Genoese weaver, should be the chosen instrument of the Almighty. He longed to signalise this feeling by some act worthy of the favour he had received. Among other aspirations Columbus conceived the idea of going on a crusade to rescue the holy sepulchre from the power of the infidels, when his work in the west was done. The spirit of knight-errantry was closely interwoven with the love of scientific speculation in the mind of this extraordinary man. His thoughts were also full of home, and of his kindred, and the old house in the Vico

Dritto was never forgotten in the midst of all the honours showered upon him at the Spanish court. Oviedo tells us that he sent help to his aged father as soon as he arrived at Lisbon, and from Barcelona he wrote to ask his two brothers to join him. The letter was long in reaching Bartolomè, and he did not arrive in Spain until after the departure of the Admiral. But young Giacomo came at once from Genoa. He had just reached the age of twenty-five, and was proud to follow the fortunes of his illustrious brother. Adopting the Spanish form of his name, he became Don Diego Colon, and accompanied the Admiral on his second voyage.

Columbus took his leave of the sovereigns and arrived at Seville early in June, and at Cadiz he selected the vessels best adapted for the voyage to Española. The fleet was composed of three ships and fourteen caravels, and the number of volunteers was far greater than the vessels could hold. Ferdinand and Isabella determined to create a department at Seville, charged with the duty of superintending the manning and equipment of the expeditions to the Indies, and with the guardianship of the royal interests and rights. It all depended on the character of the head of such a department whether it would work harmoniously and without friction; and unfortunately a worse selection could not have been made. Juan Rodriguez de Fonseca, the Archdeacon of Seville, was a man of noble family, and was known to the sovereigns as an administrator of considerable ability in a subordinate position. But he was an official of the worst type—proud, envious, and revengeful. Jealous of the great man whom he was bound to help in every way in his power, he gratified his jealousy by all the arts of circumlocution so well known to the official who is bent

on obstructive ways. The subordinates soon found that insolence to the leaders of the expeditions, and the practice of circumlocution, was the shortest way to favour. Juan de Soria was appointed accountant and auditor, while Francisco Pinelo was treasurer; and with these three officials the Admiral had to deal in fitting out his expedition at Cadiz. On this first occasion their obstruction was not so bad as it afterwards became when they were more firmly established in office. Still the accountant, Soria, appears to have been so insolent as to call forth a severe reprimand from the sovereigns on the 5th of August, and Fonseca had to be reminded that he was to further the wishes of the Admiral by all means in his power.

A disastrous belief had spread abroad that rapid fortunes were to be made in the New World; and the very worst class of men, spendthrifts of good family who hated work, and speculators of all kinds, crowded to Cadiz as volunteers. The men really required were hard working artizans and labourers, and the proportion of these was insufficient. Over 1400 men were embarked, and it is said that, when the ships had got fairly out to sea, as many as a hundred stowaways made their appearance. About twenty horses were taken out, stores of all kinds, seeds, and implements of husbandry.

The Admiral was accompanied by his brother Diego, a virtuous and discreet young man, as Las Casas describes him, always very soberly dressed, almost like a cleric. The other principal leaders in the expedition were carefully selected. Don Antonio de Torres, a brother of the nurse of Prince Juan, described as a prudent and able commander, was to go out with the Admiral, and return with some of the ships. The

accountant of the colony was Bernal de Pisa, and the overseer Don Diego Marque. The father of Las Casas went out as a councillor, and his uncle, Francisco de Peñalosa, as one of the commanders of the troops.

The first priest who went to the New World was Fray Bernardo Boil, a Catalonian, born in Tarragona, who entered the Benedictine fraternity very early in life as a monk of the monastery of Montserrat. He was specially selected by King Ferdinand to accompany the expedition, and his appointment was approved by the Pope. His bearing towards the Admiral was at first friendly and cordial, but afterwards he allowed feelings of pride and jealousy to influence his conduct, which resulted in open disloyalty to his chief. Three friars accompanied him Another subject of King Ferdinand, who became one of the chief officers of the expedition, was Mosen Pedro Margarit, an Aragonese of good family, who distinguished himself in the war of Granada as an able and at the same time a cautious officer. But Margarit and Boil, the two Aragonese specially chosen by King Ferdinand, turned out to be disloyal and insubordinate

Dr. Diego Alvarez Chanca, a physician of Seville, with a high reputation for skill and learning, was ordered to join the expedition, not only to take medical charge, but also to report upon the rare and unknown plants of the Indies. The Admiral's journal is lost, and it is to Dr. Chanca that we owe the only narrative of the voyage, contained in a long letter addressed to the Chapter of Seville. He also supplied information to the Cura of Los Palacios, Dr. Bernaldez, which enabled him to give many details of the expedition in his "Chronicle of the Catholic Kings."

But the most striking figure of the second voyage was a young man about twenty years of age, whose acquaintance the Admiral had first made in the house of the Duke of Medina Celi. Alonzo de Ojeda came of a good family in the city of Cuenca, and he passed his boyhood as a page to the Duke. He excelled as a horseman and in the use of arms of all kinds, and he combined a cool head with a fiery and dare-devil love of danger and adventure. Ojeda was of short stature, but muscular and well knit, with a handsome face and a penetrating look in his eyes. In very early youth he performed several acts of daring and valour in the war of Granada, fighting by the side of the Duke his master. A story is told of him when the Queen was at Seville in 1491 which illustrates his coolness and pluck. As the commencement of a solid scaffold for effecting repairs, a large beam had been run out from the top window of the Giralda for ten yards, at a height of 250 feet from the ground. Ojeda, in order to show off before the Queen, walked out to the end of the beam fully armed and accoutred. He then turned on one foot, threw an orange over the top of the tower, and coolly walked back to the window. The very thought of such a feat would turn most people giddy, and the crowd beneath were astounded at the youth's nerve and audacity. Alonzo de Ojeda was destined to play a leading part in the early history of the Western Indies.

Columbus took his brother-in-law, Pedro de Arana, brother of Beatriz Enriquez, as captain of one of the ships; and Juan de la Cosa, the expert draughtsman, accompanied the Admiral again in the capacity of pilot.

Ferdinand and Isabella caused the second expedition to be fitted out with the intention of establishing a per-

Pg - 145

manent colony. It would have been wiser if, while imposing their sovereignty on the newly-discovered countries, they had been contented with establishing factories or trading stations, and had prohibited the advent of a shoal of useless adventurers thirsting for gold. Such men came to a country wholly unprepared to receive them, already occupied by a gentle and unwarlike people, and destitute of any wealth that could be obtained without hard and continuous toil. The great majority of the emigrants were unaccustomed to work, and full of wild expectations. That they should be useless as settlers, that they should become discontented and insubordinate, and that they should cruelly oppress the natives, were inevitable results. No leader, be his administrative talents how great soever, could have prevented or obviated these evils. Columbus entered upon a task which no administrator could have performed successfully. He had to see that the natives were converted to Christianity, while they were forced to contribute to the wealth of the colony; he had to content the adventurers and to put them in the way of accumulating riches; he had to increase the revenues of the mother country; and, at the same time, he had to suppress insubordination and silence discontent. He was a man of genius, of warm sympathies, and of great resource. He was prudent, conciliatory, and patient. If he partially failed, it was because the circumstances rendered failure unavoidable.

But the clouds had not yet appeared on the horizon. All were full of hope and unreasoning expectations when the preparations were completed, and the order was given for the expedition to get under weigh. His sons, Diego and little Fernando, had been with the Admiral

at Cadiz, and they were with him when he hoisted his flag on board the *Marigalante*, a comparatively large ship, but a slow sailer. He gazed long and anxiously after the boys as the boat carried them to the shore, and then turned cheerfully and hopefully to the business of his high office

When the Admiral sent for his brother and dearest friend, he did not know for certain whither to despatch the letter. In truth, Bartolomè had been repulsed by the English government, and had taken up his abode at the French court, in the service of Anne de Beaujeu, who governed the country during the absence of her brother, Charles VIII, in Italy. Bartolomè was probably employed to draw maps and to illustrate works on cosmography and kindred subjects, and when, after long delay, he heard of his brother's return, he must have obtained his dismissal and hastened to Spain. But he was too late to take part in the second expedition, which sailed in September 1493. Bartolomè does not appear to have reached Seville until January in the following year. His first act was to seek out his nephew, and he presented himself at the court of Valladolid with young Diego, who had by this time completed his education. The brother and son of the Admiral were well received by Ferdinand and Isabella. Diego entered upon his duties as page to the young Prince Juan, with whom he remained in close attendance until the mournful death of the only son of the Spanish sovereigns at Salamanca, on the 4th of October 1497. The deaths of princes are always referred to by courtiers as national calamities. But the death of young Juan may really be considered one, not only to Spain but to the whole of Europe. If he had lived the fatal inheritance of the

Pg-147

4/14/14
Spanish
crown
assigns
Bartolom
to
Comma
3 cara
to the
New
World

Low Countries would have been avoided, which deluged Europe in blood for half a century, and crippled Spain, in men and treasure, beyond recovery.

On April 14, 1494, the sovereigns nominated Bartolomè Columbus to the command of a squadron of three caravels about to sail for the New World He landed in Española on the 24th of June, during the absence of his brother Christopher on a voyage of discovery, but he found his young brother Diego at Isabella, whom he had not seen for fourteen years.

NOTE.

(1) *Discovery that Columbus wrote to Toscanelli on his Return.*

The fact that Columbus wrote to Toscanelli from Seville was recently discovered by Prospero Peragallo. He purchased an edition of Sacrobosco by Dante di Rinaldi, printed at Florence in 1571, in which there is a note by the editor on the torrid and frigid zones being habitable He says that Cristoforo Colombo discovered countries within the torrid zone and returned to Spain, having found that they were perfectly habitable, adding, "As I have seen from a copy of a letter from the said Colombo, written from Seville to the very learned and expert mathematician, Messer Paolo Toscanelli, the Florentine, which was sent to me through Messer Cornelio Randoli" (*Riconferme dell' autenticità delle Historie di Fernando Colombo per Prospero Peragallo, Genova*, 1885) See Asensio, i. p 428, *note*.

2nd Voyage

CHAPTER VIII.

THE SECOND VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY AND THE SETTLEMENT OF ESPAÑOLA.

9/24/1493 17 ships left the Bay of Cadiz.

On the 24th of September 1493 the *Marigalante*, with Columbus on board, gave the signal to weigh anchor, and the squadron of seventeen vessels sailed out of the bay of Cadiz. The Admiral was now in a ship of 400 tons. He had with him his brother Diego and three old comrades of the first voyage. These were the pilot, Juan de la Cosa, who was now entered as chief draughtsman ("Maestro de hacer cartas"), Francisco Niño of Moguer, who took his son Alonzo with him as a ship's boy, and the Admiral's steward, Pedro de Terreros. On the 5th of October the squadron anchored at Gomera, where it remained two days to fill up with water and purchase live stock. The Admiral embarked eight pigs, bulls and cows, sheep and goats, fowls and pigeons, seeds of oranges, lemons, and other fruits, and all kinds of vegetables. On the 13th the island of Ferro disappeared below the horizon, and a pleasant voyage was commenced across the Atlantic. It was the intention of Columbus to discover the islands of which he had heard to the east of Española, and he therefore shaped a more southerly course than on the first voyage. There was a great contrast between that first voyage, when the minds of the sailors were constantly filled with suspicion

His ship / Marigalante of 400 tons

He had his brother Diego / & 3 from his first voyage.

Also / stock animals / Fowl / Fruit, Vegs &c

ESPAÑOLA
with the
COLUMBINE FORTS
and Settlements
Names of Caciques in Black
Tortuga
MARIEN
CIBAO
MAGUANA
XARAGUA
Guacanagari
Guahaba
Caonabo
Cahaya
Maiobanex
Guarionex
Samana
Bonao
MAGORIX
Catabanama
HIGUEY
Cayacoa
Mona
Natural Miles
West of Greenwich

and terror, and the second, where all was joyful and eager anticipation. Alonzo de Ojeda, Messer Pedro Margarit, Father Boil, and Dr Chanca, forming a sufficiently agreeable party, were the messmates of the Admiral and his young brother. The *Marigalante* was a slow sailer, and the rest of the squadron had frequently to shorten sail in order to keep station. When, according to his reckoning, the land was near at hand, the Admiral made the ships and caravels follow in line, and ordered a very sharp look out to be kept. Early in the morning of the 3rd of November the look-out men reported land ahead, and when the sun rose a lovely island was in sight clothed with trees to the summits of its lofty peaked mountains. It was Sunday, so the Admiral gave the name of Dominica to the island. He sailed along its northern shore for a short distance in search of a harbour, but seeing none, he stretched across to a small well-wooded island that was in sight to the northward, which received the name of "Marigalante," after the Admiral's ship. Here the squadron anchored. If they had continued to stand on for a short distance farther along the coast of Dominica, they would have come to the beautiful anchorage at the north end of the western coast, now called Prince Rupert's Bay. Columbus, with all the principal officials, landed on the island of Marigalante, and took formal possession in the name of the Catholic sovereigns. They were all deeply impressed by the magnificence of the vegetation, so different from anything they had ever seen before, and almost spontaneously they threw themselves on their knees and offered up thanksgiving to God. There were no signs of any inhabitants, so the voyage was resumed, and a much larger island with lofty mountain peaks

almost immediately came in sight A magnificent cascade, appearing to fall from the clouds, was seen to pour down the side of a mountain and disappear in a mass of foliage. Columbus named the island Guadalupe, in memory of the famous sanctuary of Our Lady in Estremadura

The Admiral anchored the squadron in a convenient bay, and sent several parties on shore to open communications with the natives. They came to large houses amongst the trees, some of them built in squares round open spaces. They found quantities of cotton in the houses, and some large parrots kept as pets. All the people fled at their approach, except some boys and women, who were captured, and who said that they were prisoners brought from other islands. This circumstance, and the sight of human limbs prepared for food, led the Admiral to the conclusion that he had reached one of the islands inhabited by the fierce man-eating Caribs, of whom he had heard at Española His skill as a navigator is shown by his having sailed from Europe with the intention of discovering these unknown islands of the Caribs, and having made the landfall exactly.

One remarkable discovery made by the Spaniards at Guadalupe was the pine-apple, the most delicious fruit they had ever tasted, and which excited their enthusiasm for the New World and its vegetable as well as its mineral treasures. There were other new fruits and multitudes of trees and flowers quite unknown to them, but the pine-apples were more pleasant to the taste and more fragrant than anything else among the wonders of this enchanting island. Six women and two boys, who were prisoners to the Caribs, were allowed to come on board as a refuge from their captors.

When the other parties returned to their respective vessels it was found that the overseer, Diego Marquez, who also commanded one of the caravels, was missing, with eight of his men. Trumpets were sounded and lombards discharged, but the missing party did not return. At last the Admiral sent Alonzo de Ojeda in search with forty men, but they returned without finding any trace. The Admiral was on the point of abandoning all hope, when, on Friday the 8th of November, Marquez and his men came down to the beach half dead with hunger and fatigue. They had lost their way in the dense forest, and had been wading streams, cutting their way through dense foliage, and scrambling over rocks for four days, always with the abiding terror that the ships would have sailed if they ever reached the seashore again. Abundant evidence was collected that at least three of the islands were inhabited by a ferocious race of cannibals called Caribs, who made war on their peaceful neighbours with the object of capturing prisoners for the purpose of eating them, after having first treated them with barbarous cruelty. The native names of these islands were Ayay, Turuqueira,* and Ceyre, which the Admiral named Guadalupe and Dominica.

Having filled up with water and fresh provisions, the squadron got under weigh on Sunday the 10th of November, and steered a north-east course in the direction of Española. The Admiral was becoming very anxious to reach Navidad, and learn the condition of the settlement, which he had left well stored with provisions nine months before. But on the way he had to pass a great number of islands, and the navigation called for all his nautical skill and for incessant watchfulness. Dr. Chanca

* Ayay and Turuqueira being the two islands of Guadalupe.

Pg-152

does not mention the names given to these islands, but the names of some of them are to be found in Las Casas Unfortunately, the chart and journal of the Admiral, where they would all be entered, is lost After leaving Guadalupe, a beautiful wooded island with lofty peaks came in sight, which reminded Father Boil of his abode in Catalonia. So it received the name of "Montserrat" A round islet was seen to the westward, so steep on all sides that it seemed inaccessible without stairs or ropes thrown from the top. It received the name of "Santa Maria la Redonda." The squadron rounded the eastern end of Montserrat, and the comparatively low island to the eastward received the name of "Santa Maria la Antigua" In altering course to the north-westward a number of islands must have come in sight, including St. Kitts and Nevis They are not mentioned, but they doubtless appeared on the Admiral's chart as "San Cristoval" and "Nuestra Señora de las Nieves" The squadron anchored off an island, which was named "San Martin," and then altered its course to a little south of west and reached "Santa Cruz" Here a party was sent on shore to capture some natives with a view to ascertaining the language There was a fierce encounter with some men in a canoe, and the people of Santa Cruz and San Martin were judged to be Caribs Passing a countless number of islands, to the largest of which Columbus gave the name of "Santa Ursula," and to the others "Las 11,000 Vugenes,' the modern Virgin Islands, they came to a large and fertile island, where they remained for two days. The Admiral named it "San Juan Bautista," now known as Puerto Rico The inhabitants fled and concealed themselves, so the Admiral proceeded on his voyage, and arrived off the east end of Española

San Martin

on the evening of the 22nd of November. After stopping two days off Monte Cristi, during which several excursions were made up the Rio de Oro or Yaqui, to seek for a good site for a new city, the squadron proceeded to Navidad, eager to meet the settlers. 11/27/1493

On Wednesday, the 27th of November, the ships anchored off the port of Navidad, and the Admiral ordered some lombards to be discharged, expecting that they would be answered from the fort. There was an ominous silence on shore. It was late when they anchored, so they remained on board until next morning All feared that some terrible disaster had befallen the settlers. At last a canoe arrived with a relation of the cacique Guacanagari, bringing presents. When he was asked about the settlers his replies appeared to be evasive and confused. He said that many had died of disease, some in brawls among themselves, and that there had been a war with a powerful chief of the interior of the island named Caonabó, in the course of which Guacanagari had been wounded It appeared that not one of the Spaniards who had been left at Navidad in the previous January was still alive. Next morning an armed boat was sent on shore to reconnoitre It was noticed that the natives kept at a distance, and appeared shy and distrustful. The palisade which encircled the fort of Navidad was broken down and burnt. The buildings inside were all destroyed There was evidence of some great calamity. At length a brother of Guacanagari, with some attendants, ventured to approach the Spaniards, and it was ascertained that all the settlers had perished at the hands of the cacique Caonabó, who first attacked the fort with a large force, destroying everything, and killing every soul within it, and then burnt the houses of

FIRST NEW WORLD
All 44 had been killed

Guacanagari. Many of that chief's followers had been killed in trying to defend their guests, and he himself was wounded.

Next day the Admiral landed with a large number of men, and made a close examination of the site of Navidad and the neighbourhood. The result was that he was forced to believe the worst. Not a single one remained alive of all the forty-four officers and sailors whom he had left there nine short months before. Such was the melancholy end of the first settlement in the New World. Columbus, as soon as the place where Guacanagari resided had been found, went to visit him with all his officers. He found the friendly chief lying in a hammock and disabled by a wound. Guacanagari related all the particulars of the disaster with tears in his eyes, and showed the Admiral a number of his followers who had been wounded in trying to defend the Christians.

Many of the Spanish officers disbelieved the chief's story, and proposed to make an example of him and his chief followers. Father Boil was among the number of those who counselled violence—"the first apostle of the New World!" as this truculent and disloyal monk has been absurdly called. But the large and generous heart of the Admiral at once rejected such advice. He felt no suspicion, and fully acquitted Guacanagari and his people, believing that they were telling the simple truth.

After examining the coast for several days, the Admiral selected a site for the settlement about thirty miles to the eastward of Monte Cristi. It was a smooth stretch of shore between the mouths of two streams, and in rear there was a rocky bank suitable for the site of a fort or citadel. The open space was surrounded by dense forest, but at a short distance there was excellent build-

ing stone. The people were delighted to land, after having been so long cooped up in the small vessels, and the work of unloading proceeded rapidly. Temporary buildings were run up to house the stores and provisions, while the Admiral traced out the plan of a city, to which he gave the name of Isabella. The church, government house, and royal warehouses were to be of stone, and were commenced at once. In January 1494 the houses were so far completed that all the settlers were able to sleep on shore, and on Epiphany Sunday the first mass was said by Father Boil, in a temporary chapel.

Very soon after the foundation of Isabella, sickness began to make its appearance, caused by hard work under a tropical sun, and by the disgraceful character of the provisions shipped by Fonseca and his officials. Much of the salt meat and biscuit was bad, and the wine was still worse. Fever was very prevalent, and the people became home-sick and discontented. The Admiral had received intelligence that there were rich gold-mines in the mountains of Cibao, a chain which traverses the centre of the island. Hoping to arouse the people, and draw their attention from their own miseries, he organised some exploring parties, entrusting the command of the two first, consisting of fifteen men each, to Alonzo de Ojeda and Genés de Gorbalán, both young and intrepid commanders. Crossing the coast-range of Monte Cristi they descended into the beautiful valley of the river Yaqui, where they were cordially received by the natives, who brought them presents of food and cotton. After marching about sixty miles they reached the foot of the mountains of Cibao, and, assisted by the natives, they obtained a considerable quantity of gold

dust by washing the sands of the streams. Their return to Isabella animated the hopes of the settlers, and there was much less despondency when Antonio Torres, in command of nine of the vessels, sailed on the return voyage to Spain, with the first news of the settlement, on the 2nd of February 1494. Gorbalán returned at the same time, and Torres was the bearer of an important memorial to the sovereigns, in which the Admiral set forth the needs of the colony.

In this memorial Columbus reported that the parties under Ojeda and Gorbalán had found that the sands of several rivers in the interior contained gold in considerable quantities, referring the sovereigns to the latter commander for a fuller account of these discoveries. Although there had been much sickness, owing to the want of fresh and wholesome food, yet the work of building the city and of surrounding it with suitable defences was progressing. He represented that the settlers ought to be supplied with wholesome food until they were able to gather sufficient crops from seeds sown in the colony. Some corn and sugar cane had already been sown, and had come up; but he earnestly requested that supplies of all kinds might be promptly despatched, so as to arrive in May.

The Admiral recommended that the savage cannibals in the other islands should be captured in considerable numbers and sent to Spain as slaves, for the good of their own souls and to free the peaceable islanders from the terror of their cruel invasions. His plan was that a certain number of caravels should annually be sent to the Indies laden with cattle, and that the live stock should be paid for with slaves taken from the Caribs. The revenue might be benefited by fixing a duty on

these slaves when they were landed in Spain. The memorial concluded with commendations of the valuable services of many of the officers under the Admiral's command, especially mentioning Dr. Chanca, whose letter to the Chapter of Seville was sent home by the same opportunity, and Messer Pedro Margarit.

The practice of defraying expenses by the sale of slaves was adopted by Prince Henry the Navigator, whose captains established a regular traffic along the coast of Africa. It was believed that, while the heavy expenses of the expeditions were reduced by this means, the slaves were not injured, and their spiritual and temporal welfare was promoted. Columbus had seen this traffic regularly established wherever the Portuguese traders went on the African coast, and in those days, and for centuries afterwards, public opinion looked upon it with favour. Ferdinand and Isabella adopted the same course, after the capture of Malaga and other Moorish towns. Las Casas raised his voice against it, and wrote eloquent denunciations nearly three centuries in advance of his time. But that was after the death of Columbus, and at the time when he was surrounded by administrative difficulties at Isabella the impression that slave traffic involved no moral wrong was universal. Columbus, however, was desirous of modifying the Portuguese system very materially. His proposal was confined to the cannibals who devastated the islands of the peaceably disposed Indians, and who, he considered, had placed themselves beyond the pale, and to prisoners taken in war.

The Admiral's activity had been marvellous. He had personally attended to every administrative detail, planned out the city, the fort, and the aqueduct for con-

ducting wholesome water to the houses, had organised the expeditions, and taken measures for clearing ground for raising crops. At length, just as Torres was on the point of sailing, he was himself prostrated by fever. The loss of his guiding hand was felt at once. Taking advantage of his illness, the most ill-conditioned and discontented among the settlers, led by Bernal Diaz de Pisa, the accountant, formed a plot to seize one of the vessels and return home. The conspiracy was assuming serious dimensions when the Admiral became convalescent towards the end of February. He at once stamped it out; but he proceeded cautiously, his sole object being to establish lawful authority and prevent a repetition of the offence. The discovery of slanderous documents containing numerous false accusations on board one of the ships established the guilt of the conspirators, whose handwriting was identified. They were committed to prison until an opportunity offered for sending them to Spain with a statement of the charges against them. Unfortunately discontent continued to smoulder among those whose absurd dreams of immediate gain had been disappointed, which was a serious element of danger.

The Admiral then turned his attention to the organisation of an expedition on an adequate scale to the gold-yielding mountains of Cibao. Intending to establish a fort, he took with him artificers and tools, and on the 12th of March he set out from Isabella with 400 soldiers well armed, and all the horses. The government of the rising city was entrusted in his absence to his brother Diego and Father Boil. Much difficulty was experienced in crossing the first densely wooded range of mountains with horses and heavy baggage. Several youths of good family, who had seen something of pioneering work in

Pg - 159

the war of Granada, volunteered to make the road up the rocky slopes matted with tropical vegetation, until they conducted the expedition to a pass between the hills which, from the rank of the pioneers, received the name of "Puerto de los Hidalgos." The adventurers were rewarded for their exertions by being able to feast their eyes on one of the loveliest scenes in nature. A glorious view was spread out before them. A plain, through which numerous streams were flowing like silver threads on the bright expanse of green, was dotted in all directions by masses of a darker shade, marking the numerous groves and gardens. Beyond was the lofty range of mountains of which they were in search: but the eyes of the explorers rested longer on the fertile expanse, to which the Admiral gave the name of "Vega Real."

Rocky mountains of Cibao

HERE A FORT WAS built

The strictest discipline was maintained as the Spaniards marched across the beautiful plain, and crossed the river Yaqui in canoes and rafts; but the simple natives came in crowds to offer presents of yams and fruit. The ascent of the rocky mountains of Cibao was difficult, and a halt was made on the banks of some gold-bearing streams, where several small nuggets were obtained from the natives. Here a fort was built on a hill almost surrounded by a stream called Xantigue, and a small force, under a young captain named Juan de Luján, was detached to make a further exploration of the mountains. The fort received the name of "Santo Tomas," and Pedro Margarit was appointed governor with a garrison of fifty-six men. On the return of Luján with a favourable report of the gold washings further west, the Admiral began the construction of a road from Santo Tomas to Isabella, a distance of about sixty miles. The

expedition returned, after an absence of seventeen days, on the 29th of March.

At Isabella there was nothing but trouble and anxiety. Illness was prevalent, and there had been several deaths, while the stock of flour was becoming very low. Luckily a large supply of wheat had also been brought out, which was still in excellent condition, and the Admiral set to work constructing water-mills for grinding it. There was so much sickness that it was necessary for all who were well, of whatever rank, to work at the mills. The Admiral very properly ordered that those who would not work could only receive half rations, without excepting priests. Father Boil maintained that ecclesiastics ought to be exempted from the order. He wanted no work and a full belly. The Admiral refused to yield, and the truculent monk from this time became disloyal and insubordinate.

In order to give the men a more healthy mode of life, and to save the provisions, Columbus organised a small army of 400 men and sixteen horses under the valiant Alonzo de Ojeda. He was to march to the fort of San Tomas and take the command there, while Margarit was to place himself at the head of the troops and explore the interior of the island, treating with the people, and impressing the chiefs with an idea of Spanish power by this display of force. Margarit was specially instructed to visit the territories of Caonabó and ascertain the amount of influence possessed by that chief, whose hostility had been so fatal to the settlers at Navidad. He was enjoined to preserve the strictest discipline, to prevent any injury being done to the natives, and to punish all excesses with severity.

The instructions of the sovereigns enjoined the Ad-

Pg - 161

miral, after he had established the settlement, to undertake a voyage for the purpose of further discovery. He now, therefore, prepared three caravels, and set sail on the 24th of April. A Commission, presided over by his brother Diego, was nominated to govern the settlement in his absence. The members were Father Boil, Juan de Luján, Pedro Fernandez Coronel, and Alonzo de Carbajal.

Meanwhile Ojeda proceeded to the fort, received the command from Margarit, and handed over the leadership of the exploring force to that officer. But Margarit, instead of advancing into the territories of Caonabó, marched down into the Vega Real, and established his soldiers in idleness among the natives, in direct disobedience of the written orders of the Admiral. He himself indulged in every sort of excess, and encouraged his men to do the same. The Commission at Isabella sent him frequent orders to proceed on the service set forth in his instructions drawn up by the Admiral, but he refused to obey, and his troops became utterly demoralised, robbing the natives, outraging their women, and exciting a feeling of hatred and loathing against themselves.

BARTOLOME ARRIVES WITH SUPPLIES

In the midst of all this license and confusion Bartolomè Columbus arrived at Isabella on the 24th of June, in command of three caravels, well supplied with provisions for the colony. His force of will, and the prestige of his position as a commander sent out by the sovereigns, gave him influence which he used to strengthen young Diego in his efforts to suppress the insubordination of Margarit. That officer, however, had gone too far in his evil course to recede. He had already done incalculable, probably irreparable, injury to the infant colony. He feared to face the Admiral on his return.

Pg-162

There were traitors on the Commission who were in correspondence with him, and Father Boil was the ringleader. They arranged to desert their posts, return to Spain, and spread calumnies against the Admiral. Margarit marched to Isabella with a force which the Admiral's brothers were unable to resist, seized the three caravels brought out by Bartolomè, and sailed for Spain in September, accompanied by Father Boil and other deserters. These traitors had brought the colony to the very verge of ruin, by arousing the just indignation of the natives, and entirely destroying their original feeling of cordiality and goodwill. The Admiral had made the best arrangements that an able administrator could devise, and if his orders had been loyally obeyed all would have been well. He could not foresee that an officer like Margarit, of high position and military experience, and enjoying the favour of King Ferdinand, would, when entrusted with an important duty, prove himself to be not only a traitor and a deserter, but an abandoned reprobate. He could not foresee that a priest, who had been specially selected for his piety and devotion, and appointed by the Pope himself to the spiritual charge of the infant colony, would conspire with such a man as Margarit after his true character was known, and desert his post.

While the Admiral was on the spot all went well, but the moment his guiding hand quitted the helm the colonial ship was run upon the sands by its worthless crew. The opportune arrival of Bartolomè saved it, and when the Admiral, worn out with toil and almost at death's door, returned from his terrible voyage on the 29th of September, his faithful brother continued to be a tower of strength.

Third Voyage

CHAPTER IX

THE THIRD VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY AND TROUBLES IN ESPAÑOLA.

COLUMBUS had scarcely recovered from a severe attack of fever, and was almost worn out with the anxieties of his government, when he prepared to sail on what may be considered as his third voyage of discovery. He selected three caravels out of the five that remained at Isabella, and caused them to be overhauled and provisioned for six months. The first was the old *Niña* of the former voyage, on board of which he hoisted his flag, with Francisco Niño as pilot, Alonzo Medel as master, Juan de la Cosa to draw charts, one of the monks, ten seamen, and six boys. Pedro de Terreros was with him as steward, and the notary, Fernan Perez de Luna, accompanied him as secretary. The second caravel was the *San Juan*, with Alonzo Perez Roldan as master, Bartolomè Perez of Rota as pilot, a boatswain, cooper, six seamen, and five boys The *Condera* was the third vessel, having Cristoval Perez Niño as master, a Genoese boatswain, seven seamen, and five boys. Including the Admiral there were fifty-two souls in the expedition, and it is remarkable that twenty-six came from the Palos district, evidently a great nursery for seamen in those days, while four were Genoese.

With 3 caravels including the old Niña.

Total of 52 men.

Sailing on the 24th of April 1494, Columbus pro-

4/24/1494

ceeded along the north coast of Española to San Nicolas, and then shaped a course to the southern coast of the island of Juana, as he had named Cuba in his first voyage. He anchored in a good harbour on the south coast, to which he gave the name of Puerto Grande It is now called Guantanamo Here he obtained a good supply of fish from the natives, and weighing anchor on the 1st of May, he continued to sail along the southern coast of Cuba, gazing on the lofty mountains, noting the rivers and harbours, and receiving visits from numerous Indians in their canoes, who brought presents of cassava bread, fish, and fresh water. They asked for nothing in return, but were given glass beads, hawks' bells, and other trifles. The Guanahani guide, who had been to Spain and returned with the Admiral, advised him to visit a large island of which he had heard from the natives at some distance to the southward. Columbus therefore shaped a southerly course, and the next day, Monday, the 14th of May, he came in sight of the island of Jamaica. He anchored in a bay surrounded by a beautiful country, with clumps of lofty spreading trees, and the houses of the natives scattered in all directions, so that the island appeared to be very populous The Admiral named the harbour "Santa Gloria," the modern St Anne, and the island of Jamaica received the name of "Santiago" The natives showed such hostility, discharging showers of arrows from their canoes, that at last an order was given to discharge some arquebuses among them, on which they took to flight The Admiral landed with his officers and took formal possession of the island in the names of the Spanish sovereigns The natives then ventured to approach with signs of peace and being kindly received, they soon came in crowds

with supplies of all kinds. It had become necessary to careen the vessels, and Columbus selected a port for this operation, which he named "Puerto Bueno." The work occupied three days, the Spanish sailors receiving assistance from the natives. Some of the canoes were observed to be ninety-six feet long, hollowed out of a single tree. Having completed the repairs, the little squadron sailed along the island to the western extremity, where a southerly wind prevented further exploration in that direction. They were accompanied by upwards of seventy canoes of various sizes. The western promontory of Jamaica received the name of "Cabo del Buen Tiempo," and thence the Admiral shaped a course to return to the coast of Cuba.

On the 18th of May the squadron once more anchored off the Cuba coast, near the Cape of Santa Cruz; and in proceeding westward the vessels found themselves among an innumerable number of small islets and cays, necessitating incessant watchfulness to avoid a disaster. It was a perfect labyrinth, some of the islands being mere sandbanks, others covered with trees interlaced with lovely climbing plants brilliant with flowers. It was impossible to give a separate name to each, so the Admiral designated the whole archipelago "Jardin de la Reyna"—the Garden of the Queen. He could have avoided the dangers and anxieties of this intricate navigation by keeping further out to sea, but he remembered the description of the further India, that it terminated with innumerable islands, and he did not wish to keep at a distance from a country which he believed to be near the territory of the Grand Khan.

For more than a month he continued to thread the tortuous channels, on deck day and night. The strain

on a system already sorely tried by a recent attack of fever must have been tremendous. Having been told by one cacique that there was a province far to the westward called Mangon, he came to the conclusion that this was Mango or Mangi, in the territory of the Grand Khan, mentioned in the letter of Toscanelli, and by Marco Polo. The great extent of the coast he had traversed led Columbus to think that Cuba could not possibly be an island, but that it must needs be part of the continent—perhaps the "Aureus Chersonesus" of Ptolemy. He could think of nothing else, and it preyed upon his mind. But the provisions were running short, and it was necessary to return to Española.

The mind of the Admiral was overwrought. It was worn out by incessant watching and want of rest, and a fever was actually in his veins. The tension was greater than his frame, enfeebled by his former illness, could endure, and for a time his usually sound judgment forsook him. This alone can account for the proceeding recorded in a document preserved in the Seville archives. It appears that Columbus caused the notary, Perez de Luna, to take the opinions of all the officers, men, and boys on board the three caravels as to whether a coastline of such immense length was likely to belong to an island or a continent. Their unanimous conclusion was that it was a continent, and this was embodied in a sort of affidavit with the whole of their names attached. Penalties consisting of fines and slitting of tongues, with whippings for the boys, were added if any of them recanted. The document is dated June 12th, and is witnessed by the Admiral's steward *. It shows that the Admiral was not himself, owing to sleeplessness and fever, the pre-

* Navarrete, ii. p. 143.

P9-167

monitory symptoms of a long and dangerous illness. There is, however, no cause for regret that the document was preserved. While it witnesses to the illness of the Admiral, which relieved him of responsibility for a foolish proceeding, it has, at the same time, preserved the names of all his companions in this trying voyage.

They got in wood and water on the Isla de los Pinos, which Columbus named the "Isla del Evangelista," but their provisions were at a very low ebb. They had only biscuits and a little wine, and the daily rations had to be much reduced, all, including the Admiral, sharing alike. They, however, received yams and fruits from the natives, besides doves, which were excellent, and occasionally they secured a turtle. Returning westward to the Bay of Santa Cruz, the caravels were anchored there on the 6th of July, and the Admiral landed with a large party to attend mass, which was said at a temporary altar among the trees. Great numbers of natives stood round to witness the ceremony, with awe and veneration. Among those who watched the service with closest attention was an aged cacique, who afterwards came to the Admiral and conversed with him through the Guanahani interpreter. The old man said: "You have come to these countries, which you had never seen before, with great power, and your coming has caused fear among all the people. I would have you to know that, according to our belief, there are two places to which the departed go after death, one evil and the other good. If you feel that you must die, and that such as your deeds have been so will be your reward, do not do harm here to those who have done no harm to you. What you have now done is good, because you appeared to be returning thanks to God." The Admiral was surprised

P9-168

at the grand simplicity of the old man's speech, and could only reply that he had been sent by the rich and powerful kings who were his lords to discover those lands, with no other object than to seek out those who did evil to their neighbours, that he had heard there were such people called Caribs whom he would restrain and hinder but that he would honour and do good to all who lived in peace. The answer appears to have satisfied the chief, but the conduct of Margarit in the Vega Real was even then belying the words of Columbus.

The caravels had to return to Española in the teeth of the trade wind, which was blowing fresh. The Admiral stretched across to Jamaica, and then tried to beat up along the shore, finding it slow and tedious work. But he was again enchanted with the beauty of the scenery, and had very cordial relations with the people, who followed the vessels in their canoes, and brought out presents of fresh provisions. At length the eastern extremity of Jamaica was reached, which was named "Punta del Farol" (Cape Morant), and the vessels succeeded in reaching the coast of Española on the 20th of August. The western point, now Cape Tiburon, was named by Columbus "San Miguel." Proceeding eastward along the south coast, they were much retarded by the frequent recurrence of sudden squalls of wind, which exposed them to some danger, and called for a very close look out for the sails. In one of these squalls the *San Juan* and *Cordera* parted company with the *Niña*, and were lost sight of for some days, owing to the thick weather and the deluges of rain. Off the southern extreme of Española a solitary rock rises from the sea, resembling, at a distance, a ship under sail. The Admiral called it "Alta Vela," a name which it still

Squalls of wind separate vessels for days.

Rock rises from the sea

retains. Some birds and seals were obtained on the opposite rocky shore, affording a welcome supply of fresh food, and on reaching the mouth of the Neyva river the two missing caravels again joined company. The valley of the Neyva was very fertile and populous, and the friendly people supplied the vessels with all they needed. Nine men were landed here, with full instructions as to their route, and with orders to march to the fort of San Tomas and report the return of the Admiral. The three vessels resumed their tedious voyage, still encountering sudden squalls of wind and rain, and beating against the foul wind. They took shelter under the lee of Saona or Adamanez Island, and on the 24th of September anchored off Mona Isle, in the channel between Española and Puerto Rico.

Through all this perilous and harassing navigation, with failing health and fevered brain, the Admiral had continued to guide and pilot his little squadron. But off Mona he completely broke down. The spirit had fought manfully against the enfeebled body, but nature at length avenged itself. He became prostrate and insensible, at times delirious. His people believed that the great seaman's last hour had come. They made all possible haste to return, rounding the north-east point of the island with a fair wind, and anchoring in the bay of Isabella on the 29th of September 1494. The Admiral was quite insensible, and so weak that it was feared he would die before he could be landed. He was borne on the shoulders of his crew to his house, where he was tended with affectionate care by his brothers; but it was a long and anxious illness, and for some time he was at death's door. It took five months for him to reach a state of convalescence. As soon as he recovered

consciousness he found his beloved brother, whom he had not seen for six years, seated by his bed side, and tenderly nursing him through his illness. The joyful recognition must have conduced more than any other remedial measure to his complete recovery

Bartolomè had come to devote the rest of his life to the service of his brother. The Admiral would no longer be alone when surrounded by envy and treachery This devoted brother, firm, valorous, and stout-hearted, would now be at his side to counsel and advise, and to carry out his instructions faithfully and loyally. The one brother in some measure supplied what was deficient in the other Bartolomè had no genius, less imagination, was less impulsive, and was less inclined to overlook the faults and shortcomings of others He was more practical, and perhaps better fitted to deal with the unprincipled men who had come to the New World to seek their fortunes Another source of satisfaction to the Admiral was the letter which Bartolome had brought out with him from Ferdinand and Isabella. It was dated the 13th of April, and expressed the full approval of the sovereigns of all that had been done, as reported by Antonio de Torres. They expressed their sense of the importance of the Admiral's services and of his high deserts.

But, on the other hand, Columbus had to be told of the treachery and desertion of Father Boil and of Margarit, men in whose honour and conduct he had a full right to trust implicitly. Their misconduct was not confined in its consequences to themselves. It had probably done irremediable injury to the colony, for the mischief was still at its height. The soldiers, abandoned by their leader, were spreading dismay over

the country by their licentiousness and exactions, while not one single order of the Admiral had been executed. He had to face this disastrous state of affairs when he recovered from his illness

The internal state of Española called for immediate attention. This splendid island, 200 miles long by 100 broad, was endowed with the richest gifts that tropical nature could bestow. A central ridge of mountains, now known as the Sierra de Cibao, rises to considerable heights. It sends down rivers which form fertile valleys to the southern shore, while to the north a coast range, called the Sierra de Monte Cristi, bars the way and turns the great rivers Yaqui and Yuma to west and east. The magnificent plain called the "Vega Real" is thus formed. The island was densely populated by a handsome but gentle and peaceful race, whose only arms were bows and arrows. They belonged to the earliest and aboriginal people who first reached these islands from the continent, and multiplied in peace for centuries. But at some time, not perhaps a very long time, before the arrival of the Spaniards, a second race had appeared on the scene, whether coming from Florida or from the Orinoco is uncertain. They were stronger and better armed than the aborigines, and had occupied several of the windward islands. Columbus found them at Guadalupe and Santa Cruz. These Caribs were man-stealing cannibals, and spread terror in all directions by their fierce raids and their cruelty. Caonabo, one of the most powerful of the chiefs in Española, was said to have been of Carib extraction.

The island was divided between five principal kings or caciques, with several petty chiefs under each. Guacanagari, the first friend of Columbus, ruled a territory

along the north coast. Guarionex, a chief of noble and chivalrous character, held sway over the Vega Real, the region between the two ranges of mountains. The country of Xaragua, in the south-west, belonged to Behechio, whose people appear to have been somewhat more advanced in civilisation than the rest of the islanders. The central part of the island, with the mountains of Cibao, was called Mayaguana, and was the territory of the fierce Carib named Caonabó, the destroyer of Navidad, who was married to Anacaona, the sister of Behechio. The eastern district, called Higuey, was under a brave chief named Cotubanama. These five caciques seem to have exercised considerable power over their vassals and dependents. But the nature of their government and religion is very imperfectly preserved to us. At their chief residence there was always a large house forming one room, with carved images; but this was probably a place of assembly rather than a temple. Their language is lost, though some Carib vocabularies exist.

The first event, after the convalescence of the Admiral, was the arrival of Guacanagari at Isabella. He came to report that the exactions and cruelties of the soldiers in the Vega had driven the inhabitants to desperation, and that the whole country had risen in arms. The caciques headed the movement, and Caonabó was thirsting to repeat his victory at Navidad and exterminate the invaders. One subordinate chief, named Guatiguana, had taken vengeance on ten soldiers not far from Isabella. Guacanagari offered to assist the Spaniards, and thus gave an additional proof of his good faith. The matter was very urgent. The Admiral was not yet sufficiently recovered to take the field in person. By virtue

of the authority he understood himself to possess as Viceroy, he created his brother Bartolomè—Adelantado, or Governor of the Indies. This title and dignity were eventually confirmed by the sovereigns in a royal order dated July 22, 1497, and Bartolomè held them until his death.

The work thus intrusted to Bartolomè as Adelantado was important and difficult. He worked incessantly to prepare arms and accoutrements, to collect the scattered and demoralised troops, and to restore discipline. At this critical juncture Antonio de Torres arrived with four caravels laden with welcome provisions and stores, and having on board a number of useful artizans and labourers, as well as domestic animals. The Admiral received another letter from the sovereigns, repeating their full confidence in him and their sense of the value of his services. A royal letter was also addressed to the colonists of Isabella, enjoining them to obey the orders of their Admiral as if they had been issued by themselves.

Columbus, much against his will, was dragged into the necessity of making war upon the natives, owing to the misconduct of Margarit. His first step was to inflict chastisement on the chief Guatiguana and his people for the murder of the Spanish soldiers. This brought the over-lord Guarionex, chief of the Vega Real, to Isabella, where he was kindly received. The Admiral explained to him the reason that his vassal had been punished, assured him that the misconduct of Margarit and his soldiers was contrary to the orders they had received, and fully satisfied him. Guarionex was a simple and honourable chief, only desirous of peace for his people. Before his departure his beautiful daughter was married

Pg-174

to the Admiral's Guanahaní interpreter, who had been baptized at Barcelona.

The next operation of the Admiral was to prepare for an encounter with the powerful Caonabó, who was at the head of a large force, including all the discontented natives who had been ill-treated by the soldiers of Margarit. The Admiral's plan was to establish a chain of forts along the road to Cibao, where the Spanish troops could rest and take refuge. One called "Magdalena" was built on the Yaqui, and another larger and more important station, named "Concepcion," was established in the Vega Real, under the command of an officer named Juan de Ayala. Offensive operations were commenced by Caonabó, who suddenly surrounded the fort of "San Tomas," which was defended by Alonzo de Ojeda. Guatiguana, who allied himself with the ferocious Carib, besieged the fort of "Magdalena," where Luis de Arriaga was at the head of a small garrison. Ojeda was in an impregnable position, and easily repulsed the attacks of the besiegers by the use of fire-arms. Caonabó therefore withdrew his forces beyond range, and commenced a blockade in the hope of reducing the fort by famine. But Ojeda was not a man to remain quietly behind the walls of his fort. He made daily sallies with his men, protected by armour, and each time caused fearful slaughter among the naked Indians. His activity and valour spread terror among them, and, after a siege of thirty days, Caonabó retreated. Then Ojeda proceeded to Isabella and proposed a stratagem of so audacious and desperate a character that it could only have been conceived in the brain of this extraordinary knight-errant. It was worthy of the youth who performed the mad feat at the summit of

Built a chain of forts

2 forts immediately attacked

Soldiers of Alonzo de Ojeda inflicted slaughter upon the principally Armed NAKED INDIANS

the Giralda. He told the Admiral that he would seize Caonabó in the midst of his warriors, and bring him bound to Isabella. His plan had been suggested by the awe with which the Indians listened to the bells of the Christian church. They thought that the metal was speaking, that it was a voice from heaven. They called the bell *turey*, and its fame spread over the island. Caonabó was a believer in the virtues of *turey*, and in the virtues of the metals brought by the Spaniards, especially of brass. Alonzo de Ojeda prepared some bright manacles, beautifully polished, which he called *turey de Viscaya*. He then set out for the residence of Caonabó, accompanied by nine followers, all well mounted. On being presented to the warlike chief, Ojeda said that he was the bearer of presents from the chief of the Christians called *turey de Viscaya*, which had come from heaven, and were of marvellous virtue. He proposed to Caonabó that he should come down to the river at a short distance and wash, and that then he should put on the *turey de Viscaya*, get upon Ojeda's horse, and appear before his vassals adorned and mounted. Caonabó was delighted. Ojeda put the chief on his horse, fitted the manacles on his wrists, and sprang up behind him. First making a few circles in view of the chief's followers, and gradually increasing his distance, he suddenly galloped away at full speed, followed by his men, carrying Caonabó off in the direction of Isabella. When they were safe away they secured the captive with ropes, and after two or three days of hard riding brought him into the presence of the Admiral. The fierce Carib was put in prison, and he confessed that he had killed Arana and twenty of the other unfortunate Spaniards at Navidad, and set fire to their houses with his own hands.

The natives were at first stunned by this sudden blow. But soon they began to form a new league against the invaders, headed by the brother of Caonabó, and his wife Anacoana, sister of Behechio, chief of Xaragua. All the other chiefs joined it, with the exception of Guacanagari. A vast army of natives was assembled in the Vega Real. The Admiral could only muster about 200 infantry and twenty cavalry to oppose it. But every ten men were provided with a trained mastiff. The Admiral, accompanied by his brother and Alonzo de Ojeda, left Isabella with this small force on the 24th of March 1495. He was supported by a large number of the vassals of Guacanagari from Marien. The natives, led by Manicotex, the brother of Caonabó, were 100,000 strong. The Spanish infantry was divided into two divisions, led respectively by the Admiral and the Adelantado, who were to open fire on the flanks of the unwieldy army, while Ojeda led the cavalry to an attack in front. The fire from the arquebuses at once threw the natives into confusion, and when the horsemen galloped down upon them, they fled in all directions. A horrible butchery followed. Without other arms than arrows, clubs, and wooden spears, their bodies naked and exposed, the unhappy Indians could make no defence. The prisoners taken in open war were condemned to slavery.

The Admiral had, in the previous February, despatched Antonio de Torres to Spain with four caravels. All the gold that could be collected was transmitted direct to the sovereigns, and the cargo consisted of dyewood, cotton, and other products of the island. Diego Columbus also went home, in order that, as a member of the government during the Admiral's absence, he

might expose the misstatements of Father Boil and Margarit. As many as 500 of the prisoners of war were also shipped, to be sold as slaves at Seville.

It was the anxious desire of Columbus to establish a peaceful government as soon as possible. There was complete submission on the part of the natives after the battle of Vega Real, and the Admiral made a progress through various parts of the island. A tribute was imposed, consisting of a Flemish hawk's bell full of

GOLD WASHERS (*From Oviedo*).

gold from every adult native of the mining district of Cibao, to be paid every three months, while the natives of other districts were to pay their tribute in cotton. This was a tentative measure. The tribute was found to be too heavy, and it was subsequently reduced, its character also being changed in some districts. Some of those who had to pay the tribute in gold gave information that the valley of the river Hayna, which falls into the sea on the south coast, was richer in gold than the Cibao district. The Admiral sent two Spaniards, named Francisco de Garay and Miguel Diaz, to explore.

and afterwards ordered a settlement to be formed on the banks of the Hayna

* * Ferdinand and Isabella retained their confidence in the sound judgment and integrity of the Admiral, and were anxious to promote the interests of the colony. They selected the butler of the chapel royal, Juan de Aguado, to proceed to the Indies with three caravels laden with stores and provisions, and to report to them fully on the state of affairs. He sailed towards the end of August 1495, and arrived when the Admiral was still absent in the interior. Diego Columbus returned with him, having effectually dispelled any doubts which might have arisen in the minds of the sovereigns, caused by the misstatements of the discontented deserters who had returned to Spain. Aguado was one of those men whose heads are turned by a little authority. On landing at Isabella he attempted to assume a position which was quite contrary to his instructions, encouraged the settlers to bring complaints to him, and gave colour to the idea that he had come to supersede Columbus. One of the most striking features in the character of the great discoverer was the patience and dignity with which he endured the insolence of such men as Aguado. While firmly resisting any encroachment on his authority, he treated the upstart with uniform courtesy and respect. Aguado busily collected complaints against the Admiral, and when he thought he had obtained sufficient evidence to induce the sovereigns to supersede him and put their butler of the royal chapel in his place, the informer announced his intention of returning to Spain.

The Admiral held a long consultation with his brothers. It was known that the calumnies of Aguado would be backed by those of other men of a like stamp,

and would be encouraged by the vindictive and envious Fonseca. It was therefore decided that Columbus should return with Aguado and plead his own cause. There were now six caravels in the port, and they were all prepared for the voyage home. Columbus was able to ship 200 ounces of pure gold, including some nuggets of considerable size, from the new diggings at Hayna. He also collected numbers of birds of the most beautiful plumage, and specimens of fruits and plants of all kinds, including maize, yams, and other articles of food. The Adelantado Bartolomè was appointed governor and commander of the forces during the Admiral's absence. A servant of Columbus, an esquire from the neighbourhood of Jaen, who had shown ability on several occasions, named Francisco Roldan, was appointed chief magistrate of Isabella.

When the caravels were nearly ready to sail a fearful hurricane burst over the island. Three of the vessels sank at their anchors, two were dashed to pieces on the rocks. It became necessary to construct a new caravel from the wrecks, which was named the *Santa Cruz*. The *Niña* alone escaped the fury of the hurricane and was fit for sea. The Admiral embarked in her, taking Caonabó with him; and about 220 sick and useless colonists were sent home as passengers. Aguado was in the other caravel. The two little vessels set sail from Isabella on the 10th of March 1496. For ten days they were becalmed in sight of Cape San Theramo, now Engaño, and it was not until the 10th of April that they reached Guadalupe, where they filled up with water and fresh provisions, preparatory to the voyage across the ocean.

Columbus determined to take a route directly east, to ascertain the kind of passage it was possible to make

Pg-180

against the trades. It proved a long and tedious one. A Carib woman of rank, who had been captured at Guadalupe, would have been allowed to return to her people; but she heard from Caonabó the story of his misfortunes, conceived a passion for the prisoner, and resolved to share his captivity. The Admiral intended, after the fierce chief had visited Spain and received baptism, to restore him to his people. But Caonabó abandoned himself to despondency. In spite of the care and attendance of his new wife, he sickened and died at sea, not long after the *Niña* sailed from Guadalupe.

CAONABO SICKENED & DIED AT SEA.

The voyage was so long delayed by light and contrary winds that it became necessary to reduce the scale of provisions more and more, until the people began to suffer from the pangs of hunger. But so accurate was the Admiral's reckoning that, when still out of sight of land, he ordered sail to be shortened one day, just before sunset. The pilots had no idea of the position, but next morning Cape St. Vincent was in sight. The two caravels arrived at Cadiz on the 11th of June 1496. Most fortunately the Admiral found three caravels at Cadiz under the command of the pilot, Pero Alonso Niño, on the point of sailing, with supplies, to Española. He was thus enabled to announce his safe arrival to his brother, and to send him further instructions. The Admiral gave orders that a new town should be founded, in a more healthy situation than Isabella, on the south coast of the island, and that a fort should be built near the gold mines of Hayna. On the 17th of June Niño sailed for the Indies, and Columbus proceeded on his way to Seville.

JUNE 17, 1496 NIÑA FINDLEY SAILED.

When the Admiral came to the small town of Los Palacios, near the river Guadalquivir and about fifteen

CHRISTOFLE COLOMB (*from Thevet's "Vies des Hommes Illustres"*).

Pg-182

miles from Seville, the hospitable and learned Cura came out to meet him. Columbus remained as the guest of the good Cura Dr. Andres Bernaldez, until he received a reply to the letter he had addressed to the sovereigns. A friendship was formed between them. On his departure the Admiral left some of his most important papers in the care of the Cura of Los Palacios. Dr. Bernaldez, who was Cura of Los Palacios from 1488 to 1513, was also chaplain to Dr. Deza, Archbishop of Seville, the old and tried friend of Columbus, and this probably led to his acquaintance with the Admiral, who at that time was very deeply impressed with the mercies he had received, and passed many hours in devotional exercises. Bernaldez says that the Admiral wore a dress resembling the habit of the Franciscans, with a cord of St. Francis round his waist; for he had always affected that order from gratitude to the brethren of La Rabida. It is to this visit to Los Palacios that we owe many interesting details respecting the Jamaica voyage and other parts of the Admiral's life, which occupy several chapters in the "Historia de los Reyes Catolicos," by the Bachiller Andres Bernaldez.

Crown requested Columbus to come to their court at Burgos.

Ferdinand and Isabella wrote a most cordial letter of welcome to the Admiral, and invited him to come to their court at Burgos. The Queen had been to Laredo on the north-coast, to take a last farewell of her daughter Juana, who was proceeding to Flanders to be married to the Archduke Philip. The King was returning from the frontier at Girona, where he had been making defensive arrangements in consequence of a war that had broken out with France. They met at Burgos, and received Columbus with the utmost cordiality. His delightful conversation and convincing eloquence had

always had a great charm for the Queen, and he fully and satisfactorily explained the nature and value of his new discoveries, and the difficulties of the infant colony in Española. The calumnies of Aguado received no credence whatever, and he was summarily dismissed. The Admiral presented their Highnesses with the gold he had brought home, and with many curiosities from the Indies; while they confirmed him in his titles and honours, and granted a licence for him to create a *mayorazgo* or entail in favour of his two sons and their heirs for ever. They also confirmed Bartolomè in his title of Adelantado. The entail was created on February 22, 1498. Young Fernando, then barely ten years of age, received the appointment of page to Queen Isabella on the 18th of February 1498, and entered upon his duties. Diego had been a page to Prince Juan since 1494, and continued in his service until his death in October 1497, when the Queen received both the Admiral's sons into her own household.

Orders were given for the equipment of a fleet at Seville, to be placed under the command of the Admiral, both with the object of discovery and also to supply the colony with reinforcements and provisions. This was done in spite of the financial pressure caused by hostilities with France; and the difficulties of fitting out the expedition were materially increased by the persistent obstruction of Dr. Fonseca, who had become Bishop of Badajos.

At this time João II., King of Portugal, died, and was succeeded by King Emanuel, who reigned from 1495 to 1521. One of the first acts of Emanuel was to equip an expedition, under Vasco da Gama, to make the first voyage to India by way of the Cape of Good Hope. Da Gama

Pg - 184

sailed from the Tagus on the 8th of July 1497, doubled the Cape, and arrived at Calicut, on the coast of Malabar, in May 1498, returning to Lisbon in September 1499. In the following year a second expedition was despatched to India under Pedro Alvarez Cabral, who reached the coast of Brazil on his way out on the 22nd of April 1500, and named it Santa Cruz. Proceeding on their way to India a typhoon struck the ships off the Cape, in which Bartholomeu Diaz, who commanded one of them, perished; but Cabral eventually reached Quilon, and returned safely to Lisbon in July 1501.

4th VOYAGE

CHAPTER X.

THE FOURTH VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY AND PACIFICATION OF THE COLONY.

THE great navigator was no longer the powerful enduring man of six years before. Exposure, months of sleepless watching, anxiety, and tropical fevers had at length done their work. The bright intellect, the vivid imagination, the great heart, the generous nature would be the same until death, but the constitution was shattered. The Admiral now suffered from ophthalmia, gout, and a complication of diseases The last six years of his life was destined to be a time of much and cruel suffering, aggravated by ingratitude, perfidy, and injustice.

In fitting out the third expedition every petty annoyance and obstruction that the malice of Bishop Fonseca could invent was used to thwart and delay the Admiral. Each subordinate official knew that insolence to the object of the Bishop's envy and dislike, and neglect of his wishes, was the surest way to the favour of his chief. One creature of Fonseca, named Jimeno de Briviesca, carried his insolence beyond the bounds of the endurance even of the dignified and long-suffering Admiral, who very properly took him by the scruff of the neck on one occasion and kicked him off the poop of the flagship. The delays of Fonseca and his agents caused incalculable injury to the public service, as will presently appear

EVERY PETTY ANNOY-ANCE AND OBSTR-UCTION FACED Columbus DURING the LAST 6 YRS OF his LIFE

Pg - 186

The sovereigns had ordered that six million maravedis, about £2000, should be granted for the equipment of the expedition, and that eight vessels should be provided. The contractor for provisions was Donato Berardi, a Florentine merchant settled at Seville, and owing to his death, the contracting work fell upon his assistant, who was very actively employed on this service from April 1497 to May 1498. The dates should be borne in mind. We are thus first introduced to Amerigo Vespucci. Born at Florence in 1451, he was the son of a notary named Nastugio Vespucci, and received his education from a Dominican monk, who was his uncle. He claimed Pietro Soderini, afterwards Gonfalonere of Florence, as his schoolfellow, and he obtained employment under the Medici. In 1492 Vespucci came to Spain, as a partner of an Italian trader at Cadiz, named Donato Nicolini, and he afterwards became the chief clerk or agent of Berardi. It was thus that Columbus first became acquainted with Amerigo Vespucci, when he had reached the ripe age of forty-five. As for his provisions a good deal of the meat turned bad on the voyage, and the contract was not very satisfactorily carried out. It is strange that this beef and biscuit contractor should have given his name to the New World. But perhaps not more strange than that a bacon contractor should be the patron saint of England and of Genoa *

AMERIGO VESPUCCI

The Admiral was most anxious to despatch supplies and reinforcements to his brother, and he succeeded in sending off two caravels in advance, under the command of Hernandez Coronel, who had been appointed chief

* Gibbon's "Decline and Fall," ii. p. 321 (Milman's ed. Murray, 1846).

magistrate of the colony. The other vessels consisted of two *naos*, or ships of a hundred tons, and four caravels After months of harassing and unnecessary delay they dropped down the Guadalquivir from Seville, and the Admiral sailed from San Lucar on the 30th of May 1498. He touched at Porto Santo and Madeira, and reached Gomera on the 19th of May

Columbus had become aware, through information collected from the natives of the islands, that there was extensive land, probably a continent, to the southward. He had also received a letter from a skilled and learned jeweller named Jaime Ferrer, dated the 5th of August 1495, in which it was laid down that the most valuable things came from very hot countries, where the natives are black or tawny These and other considerations led him to the determination of crossing the Atlantic on a lower parallel than he had ever done before, and he invoked the Holy Trinity for protection, intending to name the first land that was sighted in their honour. But he was impressed with the importance of sending help to the colony without delay He therefore detached one ship and two caravels from Gomera to make the voyage direct The ship was commanded by Alonzo Sanchez de Carbajal of Baeza One caravel was intrusted to Pedro de Arana, brother of Beatriz Enriquez, and brother-in-law of the Admiral. The other had for her captain a Genoese cousin, Juan Antonio Colombo. It will be remembered that Antonio, the brother of Domenico Colombo and uncle of the Admiral, lived at the little coast village of Quinto, near Genoa, and had three sons — Juan Antonio, Mateo, and Amighetto. When these cousins heard of the greatness and renown of Cristoforo, they thought at least one of them might

Pg - 188

get some benefit from his prosperity. So the younger ones gave all the little money they could scrape together to enable the eldest to go to Spain. His illustrious kinsman welcomed him with affection, and as he was a sailor he received charge of a caravel, in which trust he proved himself, as Las Casas tells us, to be careful, efficient, and fit for command. The three vessels sailed from Gomera direct for Española on the 21st of June.

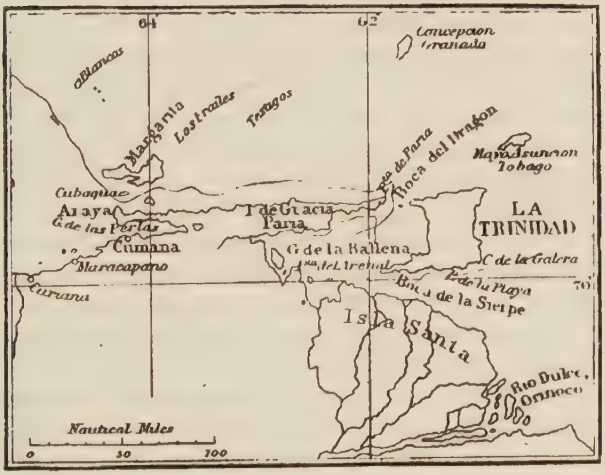
Columbus continued his voyage of discovery with one ship and two caravels. Pero Alonzo Niño, the pilot of the *Niña* in the first voyage, was with him. Hernan Perez Matteos was another pilot, and there were a few other old shipmates in the squadron. The Admiral touched at Buena Vista, one of the Cape Verde Isles, remaining at anchor for a few days, and on the 5th of July he sailed away into the unknown ocean for many days on a south-west course. His intention was to go south as far as the latitude of Sierra Leone (8° 30′ N.), and then to steer west until he reached land. After ten days the vessels were in the region of calms, and the people began to suffer from the intense heat. The sun melted the tar of the rigging, and the seams of the decks began to open. For days and days the scorching heat continued, but at length there were some refreshing showers, and light breezes sprang up from the west. But their progress was very slow, and the stock of water was nearly exhausted. So the Admiral ordered the course to be altered to north-west, in hopes of reaching Dominica. It was the 31st of July, the people were parched with thirst, and yet no land had been seen. In the afternoon of that day the Admiral's servant, Alonzo Perez of Huelva, went to the mast-head, and reported land in the shape of three separate peaks.

July 5 sailed South

After 10 Days

July 31 1498

Columbus had declared his intention of naming the first land sighted after the Holy Trinity, and the coincidence of its appearing in the form of three peaks made a deep impression on his mind. The island of Trinidad retains the name to this day. The Admiral gave heartfelt thanks to God, and all the crews chanted the *Salve Regina*, and other hymns of prayer and praise. Mean



GULF OF PARIA, OR "DE LA BALLENA"

while the little squadron glided through the water, approaching the newly-discovered land, and Columbus named the most eastern point "Cabo de la Galéra," by reason of a great rock off it, which at a distance looked like a galley under sail. All along the coast the trees were seen to come down to the sea, the most lovely sight that eyes could rest on; and at last, on the 1st of August, an anchorage was found, and they were able to

P9-190

fill up with water from delicious streams and fountains. The main continent of South America was seen to the south, appearing like a long island, and it received the name of "Isla Santa." The point near the watering-place was called "Punta de la Playa."

The western end of the island was named "Punta del Arenal," and here an extraordinary phenomenon presented itself. A violent current was rushing out, through a channel or strait not more than two leagues wide, causing great perturbation of the sea with such an uproar of rushing water, that the crews were filled with alarm for the safety of the vessels. The Admiral named the channel "La Boca de la Sierpe." He piloted his little squadron safely through it and reached the Gulf of Paria, named by him "Golfo de la Ballena." The land to the westward, forming the mainland of Paria, received the name of "Isla de Gracia." Standing across to the western side of the gulf, the Admiral was delighted with the beauty of the country and with the view of distant mountains. Near a point named "Aguja" the country was so fruitful and charming that he called it "Jardines," and here he saw many Indians, among them women wearing bracelets of pearls, and when they were asked whence the pearls were obtained they pointed to the westward. As many pearls as could be bartered from the natives were collected for transmission to the sovereigns, for here was a new source of wealth, another precious commodity from the New World.

TRADED FOR AN ABUNDANCE OF PEARLS

Columbus was astonished at the vast mass of fresh water that was pouring into the Gulf of Paria. He correctly divined the cause, and made the deduction that a river with such a volume of water must come from a

RIVER OF FRESH WATER

great distance. His prescient mind showed him the mighty river Orinoco, the wide savannas, and the lofty range of the Andes, but the trammels of the erroneous measurements of astronomers bound them to Asia, and prevented him from picturing them to himself in the New World he had really discovered. That the land must be continuous appeared to be proved, not only from the deductions of science, but also from the Word of God. For he believed it to be established from the revealed word (2 Esdras vi. 42) that the ocean only covered one-seventh of the globe, and that the other six-sevenths was dry land. Moreover, his splendid intellect was united with a powerful imagination. When he had grasped the facts with masterly intuition, his fancy often raised upon them some strange theory derived partly from his extensive reading, partly from his own teeming brain. Thinking that a long and rapid course was insufficient to account for the volume of water and the violence of the currents, he conceived the idea that the earth, though round, was not a perfect sphere, and that it rose in one part of the equinoctial line so as to be somewhat of a pear shape. Thus he accounted for the exceptional volume of water by the notion of rivers flowing down from the end of the pear. One step further in the realms of fancy, and he indulged in the dream that this centre and apex of the earth's surface, with its mighty rivers, could be no other than the terrestrial paradise. Writing as one thought coursed after another in his teeming fancy, we find these passing whims of a vivid imagination embodied in the journal intended for the information of the sovereigns.

But time was passing on, and it was important that he should convey the provisions with which his vessels

were loaded to his infant colony. He had seen that another narrow channel led from the northern side of the gulf, and had named it "Boca del Dragon." On the 12th of August he had piloted his vessels to the Punta de Paria, and prepared to pass through the channel. At that critical moment it fell calm, while the two currents flowed violently towards the opening, where they met and formed a broken, confused sea. But the Admiral made use of the currents, and by the exercise of consummate seamanship took his three vessels clear of the danger and out into the open sea. The islands of Tobago and Grenada were sighted, receiving the names of "Asuncion" and "Concepcion." Then the rocks and islets to the westward came in view, named the "Testigos" and "Guardias," and the island "Margarita." The latter name shows that the Admiral had obtained correct information from the natives of Paria respecting the locality of the pearl-fishery.

The Admiral now crowded all sail to reach Española, intending to make a landfall at the mouth of the river Azuma, where he knew that his brother the Adelantado had founded the new city, and named it San Domingo in memory of their old father, Domenico Colombo. But the current carried him far to the westward, and on the 19th of August he sighted the coast fifty leagues to leeward of the new capital. On hearing of his arrival on the coast, Bartolomè got on board a caravel and joined him; but it was not until the 31st that the two brothers entered San Domingo together, the Admiral for the first time. Young Diego, the third and youngest brother, welcomed them on their arrival.

The Admiral had been absent for two years and a half, during which time the Adelantado had conducted

Pg - 193

the government of the colony with remarkable vigour and ability. Yet, owing to the mutinous conduct of the worst of the settlers, there was a very disastrous report to make

When the Adelantado assumed the command on the departure of the Admiral for Spain in March 1496, his first step, in compliance with the instructions he had received, was to proceed to the valley on the south side of the island, in which the gold-mine of Hayna was situated, and to build a fort which he named "San Christoval." He next, having received supplies and reinforcements, together with letters from the Admiral, by the three caravels under Niño, took steps for the foundation of the new capital. Still following his brother's instructions, he selected a site at the mouth of the river Azuma, where there was good anchorage in the bay, and a fertile valley along the banks of the river. On a bank commanding the harbour a fortress was erected and named San Domingo, while the city was subsequently built on the east bank of the river. It became the capital of the colony. Before long Isabella, on the north coast, was entirely abandoned. Trees soon grew up in the streets and through the roofs of the houses. It presented a scene of wild desolation, and ghosts were believed to wander in crowds through the abandoned city. Ruins of the house of Columbus, of the church and the fort, can still be traced out by those who penetrate into the dense jungle which now covers that part of the coast.

ISABELLA BECAME A GHOST CITY AS SANTA DOMINGO BECAME THE COLONIAL CAPITAL

The next proceeding of the indefatigable Adelantado was the settlement of the beautiful province of Xaragua, forming the south-western portion of the island. It was ruled over by a chief named Behechio, with whom dwelt the famous Anacaona, his sister, widow of Caonabo,

N

Pg-194

but, unlike that fierce Carib, a constant friend of the Spaniards. Behechio met the Adelantado in battle array on the banks of the river Neyva, the eastern boundary of his dominions. But as soon as they were informed that the errand of the Spanish governor was a peaceful one, both Behechio and Anacaona, who was a princess of great ability and of a most amiable disposition, received him with cordial hospitality. When, after a time, he opened the subject of tribute to them, they showed opposition. But Bartolomè proved himself to be a masterly diplomatist, and in the end Behechio not only consented to impose a tribute, the details of which were amicably arranged, but undertook to collect and deliver it periodically to the Spanish authorities. These Indians were quite ready to submit to beings who appeared to be superior in power and intelligence to themselves. If the sovereigns of Spain had trusted Columbus and his brothers fully and completely, had established trading stations and imposed a moderate tribute, and had absolutely prohibited the overrunning of the country by penniless and worthless adventurers, they would have had a rich and prosperous colony. The discontent and rebellion of the natives was solely caused by the misconduct of the Spaniards.

* * An insurrection broke out in the Vega Real, headed by the chief Guarionex, who, after suffering innumerable wrongs from the Spaniards, was at last driven to desperation by an outrage on his wife. He assembled with a number of dependent caciques; but the news was promptly communicated to the garrison of Fort Concepcion, and forwarded to San Domingo. The Adelantado stamped out the rebellion with his accustomed vigour. He came by forced marches to Concepcion, and thence, without

stopping, to the camp of the natives, who were completely taken by surprise Guarionex and the other caciques were captured, and their followers dispersed Always generous after victory, Bartolomè Columbus released Guarionex at the prayer of his people—a measure which was alike magnanimous and politic But it was impossible to rule over the natives satisfactorily unless the Spanish settlers could be forced to submit to the laws, and the Adelantado was not powerful enough to keep the bad characters in subjection The loyal and decent men of the colony were in a small minority The consequence was that the unfortunate Guarionex was again goaded into insurrection On the approach of the Adelantado he fled into the mountains of Ciguey on the north-east coast, and took refuge with a dependent cacique named Mayobanex, whose residence was near Cape Cabron, the western extreme of the Samana peninsula A difficult and arduous mountain campaign followed, which Bartolomè conducted with remarkable military skill It ended in the capture and imprisonment of both the chiefs.

Behechio now announced that he had collected the required tribute, consisting of a very large quantity of cotton, and that it was ready for delivery The Adelantado therefore proceeded to Xaragua, and not only found this great store of cotton, but received an offer from the generous chief to supply him with as much cassava bread as he needed for the use of the colony This was a most acceptable present, for the lazy, ill-conditioned settlers had neglected to cultivate their fields, and a famine was imminent The Adelantado ordered a caravel to be sent round to Xaragua to be freighted with cotton and bread, and returned himself

Pg - 196

to Isabella after taking a cordial farewell of his native friends. He had shown extraordinary talent in his government of the native population, and his rule had been a complete success. Always moderate in victory, he had suppressed the insurrections without bloodshed, and had conciliated the people by his moderation. He had made long and difficult marches, had subdued opposition by his readiness of resource and energy, and had administered the native affairs with humanity and excellent judgment.

Ringleader of mutiny was Francisco Roldan a former servant of Columbus

Unfortunately his power was insufficient to cope successfully with the insubordinate Spaniards. The ringleader of the mutineers was Francisco Roldan, a man whom Columbus had raised from the dust. He had been a servant, and the Admiral, noting his ability, had intrusted him with some judicial functions. When he sailed for Spain he appointed Roldan chief-justice of the colony. This ungrateful miscreant fostered discontent and mutiny by every art of persuasion and calumny at his command, and soon had a large band of worthless and idle ruffians ready to follow his lead. His first plan was to murder the Adelantado and seize the government, but he lacked the courage or the opportunity to put it into execution. His next step was to march into the Vega Real with seventy armed mutineers, and attempt to surprise Fort Concepcion. The garrison was commanded by a loyal soldier named Miguel Ballester, who closed the gates and defied the rebels, sending to the Adelantado for help. Bartolomé at once hastened to his assistance, and on his arrival at Fort Concepcion he sent a messenger to Roldan, remonstrating with him, and urging him to return to his duty. But Roldan found his force increasing by the adhesion of all the

discontented men in the colony, and his insolence increased with his power. All would probably have been lost, but for the opportune arrival of Pedro Hernandez Coronel in February 1498, who had been despatched from San Lucar by the Admiral in the end of the previous year with reinforcements. He also brought out the confirmation of Bartolomè's rank as Adelantado.

The Adelantado was thus enabled to leave Fort Concepcion and establish his headquarters at San Domingo. He sent Coronel as an envoy to Roldan, to endeavour to persuade him to return to his duty; but the mutineer feared to submit, believing that he had gone too far for forgiveness. He marched into the province of Xaragua, where he allowed his dissolute followers to abandon themselves to every kind of excess. The three caravels which had been despatched from Gomera by the Admiral unfortunately made a bad landfall, and appeared off Xaragua. Roldan concealed the fact that he was a leader of mutineers, and receiving the captains in his official capacity, induced them to supply him with stores and provisions, while his followers busily endeavoured to seduce the crews, and succeeded to some extent. When Roldan's true character was discovered, the caravels put to sea with the loyal part of their crews, while Alonzo Sanchez de Carbajal, a loyal and thoroughly honest man, who was zealous for the good of the colony, remained behind to endeavour to persuade Roldan to submit to the Admiral's authority. He only succeeded in obtaining from him a promise to enter into negotiations with a view to the termination of the deplorable state of affairs he had created, and with this Carbajal proceeded to San Domingo.

Such was the state of affairs when Columbus arrived

Pg - 198

at the new seat of his government. His brother had ruled with vigour and ability during his absence, had administered native affairs very successfully, but his power had been insufficient to subdue the band of Spanish miscreants who were still in open mutiny. The Admiral was filled with grief and disappointment at the turn affairs had taken. A thoroughly loyal man himself, with no thought or desire but for the good of the colony, he was thwarted by treacherous miscreants, who cared for nothing but the accumulation of riches for themselves, and for a life of indulgence and licentious ease. After long consideration he resolved upon a policy of conciliation. The unsettled state of affairs was bringing ruin on the island, and the restoration of peace was an absolute necessity. The magnanimous Genoese was incapable of personal resentment. The men themselves were indeed beneath his contempt, but he felt bound to treat with them, and even to make great concessions, if necessary, for the good of the public service. The welfare of the colony was his sole object, and he did not hesitate to sacrifice every personal feeling to his sense of duty. It is with some impatience that one finds the grand schemes of discovery and colonisation interrupted by such contemptible means, and the course of the narrative checked by the necessity for recording, however briefly, the paltry dissensions of vile miscreants such as Roldan and his crew.

The mutineers were most unwilling to make any agreement. They were leading the sort of lawless and licentious life that exactly suited them, and were disinclined to submit to any authority. The interests of their leaders, however, were not quite the same, and the acceptance of advantageous terms would suit them. Cu-

bajal was employed by the Admiral to conduct the negotiations, while the veteran Ballester returned to Spain in November 1498 with the news of the rebellion, and a request from the Admiral that a learned and impartial judge might be sent out to decide all disputes.

It was finally agreed that Roldan should return to his duty, still retaining the office of chief justice; that all past offences should be condoned, and that he and his followers should receive grants of land, with the services of the Indians. The Admiral consented to these terms most unwillingly, and under the conviction that this was the only way to avoid the greater evil of civil dissension. He resolved, however, that any future outbreak must be firmly and vigorously suppressed by force. Although Roldan had now resumed his position as a legitimate official ready to maintain order, it could hardly be expected that his fatal example would not be followed by other unprincipled men of the same stamp, when the opportunity offered.

Trouble arose owing to the conduct of a young Castilian named Hernando de Guevara. Roldan was established in Xaragua, when the youthful gallant arrived at the house of his cousin, Adrian de Mujica, one of the ringleaders in Roldan's mutiny, and fell in love with Higueymota, the daughter of Anacaona. Guevara, for some misconduct, had been ordered by the Admiral to leave the island, but instead of obeying he had made his way to Xaragua, and caused trouble by this love passage, for he had a rival in Roldan himself, who ordered him to desist from the pursuit of the daughter of Anacaona, and to return to San Domingo. Guevara refused to obey, but he was promptly arrested and sent as a prisoner to the capital. When his cousin Mujica,

Pg- 200

who was then in the Vega Real, received the news, he raised a mutiny, offering rewards to the soldiers if they would follow him in an attempt to rescue Guevara. The Admiral, though suffering from illness, showed remarkable energy on this occasion. Marching very rapidly at the head of eighteen chosen men, he surprised the mutineers, captured the ringleader, and carried him off to the fort of Concepcion Some severity had now become incumbent upon the authorities, and Mujica was condemned to death. The Admiral regretted the necessity, but in no other way could a motive be supplied to deter others from keeping the country in a constant state of lawless disorder Guevara, Riquelme, and other disorderly characters were imprisoned in the fort at San Domingo, and by August 1500 peace was quite established throughout the island.

Thus had Columbus restored tranquillity to the colony. By prudent and conciliatory negotiation, during which he had exercised the most wonderful self-abnegation and patience, he had succeeded in averting the serious danger caused by the formidable revolt of Roldan. But as the habit of disorder was threatening to become chronic, he wisely took another way with the sedition of Mujica, maintaining order by a resort to prompt and vigorous action, and making a salutary example which was calculated to be deterrent in its effects.

With the restoration of peace trade revived and prosperity began to return. The receivers of grants of land found that they had a stake in the country, and sought to derive profit from their crops. Similar activity appeared at the mines, and the building at San Domingo progressed rapidly The Admiral began to hope that the first troubles incident to an infant colony were over.

MINES

Pg - 201

and that the time had arrived for Spain to feel the advantages of his great achievement. He now looked forward to further and more important discoveries followed by colonization on the main continent.

Yet at this very time a blow was about to come from a quarter whence it was least to be expected, which was destined to shatter all the hopes of this long-suffering man, and dissipate all his bright visions of the future.

DAUNTING FUTURE...

Pg- 202

In Chains

Bishop Fonseca as adversary a thorn in his side

CHAPTER XI.

COLUMBUS IN CHAINS

Hitherto the Spanish sovereigns had kept their faith with Columbus. They had supported him with generous consistency, had fully acknowledged the greatness of his services, and had understood and made allowances for the extraordinary difficulties of his position. They had steadily pursued this honourable and politic line of conduct in spite of the calumnies that had been poured into their ears, at the instigation of Bishop Fonseca, by the deserters from the colony. The change in their conduct, after Columbus left Spain in 1498, is attributed to the incessant repetition of new complaints against the Admiral. Crowds of discontented adventurers returned by every ship. At one time about fifty of these malcontents frequented the court of the Alhambra, when the sovereigns were at Granada. They declared that they could afford to eat nothing but grapes, and brought bunches with them, while they shouted for justice. Their insolence rose to such a pitch that when the King crossed the court they crowded round him, crying "Pay us! pay us!" The two sons of the Admiral were then Queen's pages, and if one of them was seen the truculent crowd called after him: "There goes the Admiral's son, the spawn of the big mosquito who has discovered countries of vanity and deceit for the misery and death

of Castilians," and added such insults that the lads excused themselves from passing near the shameless mendicants.

But all this neither explains nor excuses the conduct of the sovereigns. They had heard the same or kindred calumnies before, which had been disproved to their satisfaction, and had not caused any change in their policy. There must have been some other reason. The real truth appears to have been that Ferdinand was deeply impressed with the importance of the discovery, and the vast and far reaching consequences to which it was likely to lead. When he consented to grant the concession to Columbus he was sceptical of any result, and believed he was granting nothing of any value. But when he became convinced of the true greatness of the achievement, he at the same time became anxious to curtail, and if possible to withdraw, the concession. Fonseca, in the hope of gratifying his malignant spite, was only too glad to represent this contemplated breach of faith as wise and politic. He granted permission for voyages of discovery to be undertaken without the knowledge or consent of Columbus, and in direct contravention of his rights as Admiral. But it was his position as Viceroy that Ferdinand was most anxious to assail. His supersession, without trial or previous hearing and judgment, would be a very shameful and dishonourable breach of faith, but it was one to which Isabella was at length induced to consent. It is probable that she yielded to the plausible representations of her husband.

Francisco Bobadilla, a Comendador of the Order of Calatrava, was selected to supersede the Admiral, and was appointed governor and judge of the island during royal pleasure, with extraordinary powers to investigate

complaints, and with a number of blank papers signed by the sovereigns, which he was empowered to fill up at his discretion. A curt letter was addressed to the Admiral, desiring him to deliver up charge to Bobadilla, and to give faith and obedience to whatever that official should impart. The appointment is dated May 21, 1499. No worse selection could possibly have been made. Bobadilla had no single quality to recommend him for such a post. His arrogance and insolence were not more conspicuous than his incapacity. Two caravels, called the *Antigua* and the *Gorda*, were fitted out to convey him to Española, and he was furnished with a guard of honour consisting of twenty-five picked soldiers. He sailed from Cadiz in June 1500.

On Sunday, the 23rd of August 1500, when dawn broke, two strange sail were reported off the harbour of San Domingo. The Admiral was in the Vega Real, busily engaged in establishing order and settling the affairs of the district. The Adelantado was absent in Xaragua, occupied with similar administrative work. The youngest brother, Don Diego Columbus, was in command at San Domingo, and sent out a canoe to the caravels, which were waiting for the tide to take them up the river. The men in the canoe returned with the news that from one of the caravels a man had hailed them, declaring that he was an examining judge appointed by the King and Queen to investigate all that had happened in the island, and desiring them to report his approach to Don Diego. Bobadilla did not land until the next morning. He then conducted himself in the most extravagant manner. He first marched to the church to hear mass, preceded by his bodyguard. He then sent for Don Diego, and ordered him to deliver up

Pg - 205

the prisoners in the fort, including Riquelme and Guevara Don Diego, as well as Miguel Diaz, the governor of the fort, represented that they could not act without orders from the Admiral, and requested that they might be allowed time to communicate with him Bobadilla would not wait. He and his bodyguard attacked the fort, although there was no resistance, broke the door down, liberated the criminals, and carried them in triumph through the street of San Domingo. This outrageous conduct was followed by further unjustifiable violence He broke open the Admiral's house and occupied it as his own, appropriating all the private papers and other property, and all the treasure it contained The insolent robber then seized upon Don Diego, loaded him with irons, and confined him in the hold of one of the caravels in the river.

The Admiral received the news of Bobadilla's arrival from a messenger sent by his brother, and at once commenced his journey to San Domingo, forwarding a letter of welcome in advance Meanwhile the absurd creature, who had seized the government, gave orders of all kinds, and threw everything into confusion Among other decrees he issued one, in order to court popularity with the mob, by which he reduced the royal fifth due from the produce of mines to an eleventh, and granted free leave for every one to use the mines and gold washings as they pleased He also devoted much time to the collection of false accusations against the Admiral.

Columbus was arrested in the town of San Domingo

Columbus resolved to submit loyally and unreservedly to the orders of the Queen, as interpreted by her chosen representative He proceeded to San Domingo almost unattended He was arrested outside the town, loaded with irons, and imprisoned in the fort, with orders that

Pg - 206

no one was to be allowed to speak with him He bore all with silent dignity, not condescending to utter a word of complaint. He had sent to Bartolomè, who was at the head of a large force in Xaragua, to come at once to San Domingo On his arrival he was treated in the same way.

There could be no degradation to the Admiral His reputation was raised by the cowardly insults of the wretch who had been so improperly clothed with a little brief authority, for he received them with the calm dignity of a noble nature. The disgrace and degradation fell on the Queen, and through her on the Spanish nation, and so it was generally felt Bobadilla must have thought that his outrageous conduct would please Fonseca, and be approved by Ferdinand, so that there can be no doubt that he had received hints, which he interpreted too literally. The intense stupidity and dulness of the outrage is its most striking feature, for if Bobadilla had been gifted with a grain of common sense he must have known that even Fonseca would repudiate such coarse brutality The conviction of his successor's incapacity must have been the hardest thing for the Admiral to bear Just when peace had been secured, when orderly government was established and prosperity was reviving, it was heartrending to see the delicate machinery handed over to this wretched creature, with the inevitable result that the colony would be thrown back into confusion and ruin.

Alonso Vallejo, the captain of the caravel *Gorda*, was ordered to receive Bartolomè and Diego on board, and then to proceed to the fort with some men-at-arms to receive the custody of the Admiral "Vallejo, whither do you take me?" asked Columbus, believing

that he was about to be murdered. "Sir, I am to take you on board the ship." Still doubtful of his fate, he said, "Vallejo, is it true?" "By the life of our Lady," exclaimed the honest sailor, "it is true that I am to take you on board." The Admiral was satisfied. He soon found himself with his brothers, and early in October 1500 the caravel sailed from San Domingo. They were scarcely out of sight of land when Vallejo and Andres Martin, the owner of the vessel, presented themselves before the Admiral. Though in the employment of Fonseca they were gentlemen, and were filled with shame and sorrow at the base treatment of so great a man Both threw themselves on their knees to remove the irons. But the Admiral would not consent He warmly thanked his generous hosts, but he said that he had been manacled by the Queen's representative, and by the Queen's order alone should the irons be removed.[1] The voyage was a quick and prosperous one, and the Admiral was treated with the respect and attention due to his high rank and to his mighty achievements.

While at sea he wrote a letter to Doña Juana de Torres, formerly nurse of Prince Juan, and sister of the Admiral's true and loyal friend, Antonio de Torres. This lady was a great favourite of the Queen, and it was probably intended that its contents should be made known to Isabella In reading this touching letter one is surprised at the calmness with which he speaks of his wrongs, and at his confident reliance on the justice of the Queen after all that had passed, when she really knew the truth. Columbus was firmly convinced that he was a humble instrument chosen by God to carry out His designs for the discovery of the New World. "God made me the messenger of the new heaven and the new

Pg-208

earth of which He spake in the Apocalypse of St. John, after having spoken of it by the mouth of Isaiah." He had dreams and visions which impressed themselves deeply on his mind. On one particular occasion, when he was surrounded by difficulties, and without the means of paying the troops, it was on Christmas Day 1499, he was sitting alone and in deep dejection. Suddenly he thought he heard a voice: "Take courage. Be not afraid nor fear. I will provide for all." On that very day the discovery of a rich gold-yielding district was announced. The coincidence made so deep an impression that he mentioned it in more than one of his letters.

In his letter to his lady friend he refers to the innumerable contests he had had with the ill-usage of the world, and to his conquest in all of them until now, when he finds that neither strength nor prudence will avail, and he has been reduced to the lowest ebb. But he takes courage. Hope in Him who created us all is his support. His help he has ever found near at hand: and he then mentions the words of encouragement he thought he heard on that Christmas Day. He believed in the special help of the Almighty because he was a chosen instrument to work out the divine will.

He then speaks gratefully of the Queen. All were incredulous when he explained his great idea, except only his royal mistress, to whom the Lord gave the spirit of intelligence and great courage, and made her the heiress of all, as a dear and well beloved daughter. He now appeals to her for just judgment. He is judged, he says, as if he was a governor who had been sent to some province or city under regular government. He ought to be judged as a captain sent from Spain to the

Indies, where by divine will he subdued another world to the dominion of the King and Queen, our sovereigns, in consequence of which Spain, that used to be poor, is now the most wealthy of kingdoms He ought to be judged as a captain who for so many years has borne arms, never quitting them for an instant. He ought to be judged by cavaliers who have themselves won the meed of victory—by knights of the sword, not by lawyers

He then gives a temperate account of the recent occurrences, dwelling on his discovery of the pearl-fishery, on the disloyalty of the mutineers, on his unwillingness to inflict the punishment of death on Mujica, and on his final establishment of quiet when Bobadilla arrived. "By that time everything was quiet, the land was thriving, and the people at peace" He describes the conduct of Bobadilla with marvellous calmness considering the provocation he had received, alludes to the robbery of his papers and treasure, and complains of the false accusations and cruel calumnies to which he has been exposed. Finally, he speaks with simple humility of his faults, and expresses confidence in the justice of the sovereigns. 'I know assuredly that the errors which I may have fallen into have been committed without any intention of doing wrong, and I think their Highnesses will believe me when I say so. If I have been in error, it is innocently and under the force of circumstances, as they will shortly understand beyond all doubt."

This letter is the production of a large-hearted, simple-minded man, bowed down by injustice and wrong, but confident in the justice of his cause It was sure to make a deep impression on such a woman as Isabella, who on many points was in sympathy with her illus-

trious servant. Columbus had true friends in his noble-minded jailers. Andres Martin, as soon as the caravel was anchored in the bay of Cadiz, on the 20th of November 1500, sent a messenger off to Granada with the letters written by the Admiral during the voyage. He thus managed that they should arrive at court before Fonseca would have time to transmit Bobadilla's malicious calumnies.

The discoverer of the New World had arrived at Cadiz a prisoner, and in chains. The disgraceful news spread through the country, and excited the most lively indignation and sympathy. The chivalrous nation was hurt to the quick. The whole people felt shamed and humiliated at an outrage the perpetration of which was so repugnant to the nature of a self-respecting and noble race. Ferdinand, and even Fonseca, had to dissemble and express the same feeling, if they had it not. The Queen truly felt with her people. She shed tears over the letter received by Doña Juana de Torres. Orders were at once despatched to the Governor of Cadiz to set the Admiral and his brothers at liberty, and to treat them with all possible distinction. A sum of 2000 ducats was ordered to be paid to them for their equipment, and they were invited to attend the court at Granada. The sovereigns also addressed a most affectionate letter of welcome to the Admiral. After a short stay at Seville, Columbus and his brothers arrived at Granada on the 17th of December 1500.

When the grey-headed man, bowed down by hardships and diseases contracted in their service, stood before the sovereigns in the royal hall of the Alhambra, they were embarrassed for a moment, as well they might be. Then they both rose from their thrones as the Admiral threw

COLUMBUS. (*From the old engraving of the Paulus Jovius portrait.*)

himself on his knees before them. Isabella shed tears, and even Ferdinand was profoundly moved. It was some time before Columbus could speak, so deep was his emotion. At length he gave expression to his loyalty and zeal, and protested the rectitude of his intentions in all that he had done. But the Queen would not suffer him to proceed. She assured him that the wrongs inflicted upon him had been without the authority and contrary to the wishes of the sovereigns, that they injured the prestige of the throne, and that the Admiral's innocence was already established. Fonseca and his myrmidons had to keep out of sight, while the letters of Bobadilla were not even read. The Admiral was treated with great consideration, the restoration of all his rights in due time was promised, and the King and Queen took frequent opportunities of showing him favour.

The recall of Bobadilla was the first and most urgent act of retributory justice. Fray Nicolas de Ovando, the Comendador of Lares, of the order of Calatrava, who was appointed to succeed him, received orders to see that all their papers, gold, and property of all kinds, were restored to Columbus and his brothers. If anything was missing it was ordered that Bobadilla should make it good. Ovando was a man of strict integrity but narrow mind, and with no administrative capacity. He is said to have been respected, if not liked, by the Spaniards. Las Casas, who was his friend, admitted that he was unfit to govern Indians. His want of sympathy or imagination made him callous to their sufferings, and his inhuman cruelty equalled anything that has been recorded of any conqueror in the New World. He went out in the largest fleet that had yet left the shores of Spain, consisting of thirty-two ships and caravels under the command of

Pg 213

Antonio de Torres. It conveyed 2500 men to the colony, live stock, seeds and agricultural tools, and a large supply of provisions. Bartolomè de las Casas visited the New World for the first time in this fleet. Ovando sailed from San Lucar on the 13th of February 1502, and arrived at San Domingo on the 15th of the following April. Bobadilla and the mutineer Roldan were to be sent home for trial when the ships returned.

Columbus protested against the appointment of Ovando, as infringing his rights and privileges. It was therefore limited to two years, and the Admiral was assured that as soon as numerous pending questions were settled, and the government was firmly established, his suspended rights would be restored to him. He remained for several months in attendance on the court at Granada, enjoying the society of his two sons, and the acquaintance of men of education and literary tastes. Among his new friends was Angelo Trivigiano, the secretary to the Venetian Embassy. Trivigiano had previously been secretary to Dominico Malipieri, the celebrated Admiral, who was anxious to obtain full information respecting the discoveries and maps of Columbus. Trivigiano addressed a letter to Malipieri from Granada on August 21, 1501 * He said that he had formed a great friendship for Columbus, who was then deprived of his rights, not in favour with King Ferdinand, and with little money. With the Admiral's help he had arranged to have a map of the discoveries drawn at Palos, for transmission to Malipieri. The Admiral also promised to give his friend copies of all the reports he had sent to Ferdinand and Isabella. Abstracts of two other letters

* Given by Cardinal Zurla in his edition of Marco Polo (1818), and reprinted by Harrisse, ii. p. 119.

of Trivigiano have been preserved, dated in September 1501 and early in 1502, on the same subject. They show the eagerness with which information respecting the work of the great discoverer was sought for, and also throw a pleasant light on the society in which Columbus mingled while at Granada

The Admiral was relieved of the wearing anxieties of administration, but his active mind could have no rest. During the residence of a year at Granada his thoughts returned to the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre, and to an examination of the prophecies He studied the latter subject with great ardour and enthusiasm, seeking for references to the discovery of the Indies, and to the expulsion of infidels from the holy places His ardent imagination fostered the illusion that the vast riches derived from discoveries in the Indies would enable him to lead a new crusade, rescue the Holy Sepulchre from the infidels, and enable Christians to realise the passion of the Redeemer on the spot where He suffered, without fear of molestation Such notions were quite suited to the spirit of the age in which he lived. Columbus devoted many hours of each day to the study of the Holy Scriptures, and of the most noted commentators among the early Fathers of the Church He was guided and assisted in his researches by a great friend, who was a monk in the Carthusian monastery of Santa Maria de Las Cuevas at Seville, named Gaspar Gorricio. The result of these studies was a work which he entitled—*Manipulus de auctoritatibus dictis ac sententiis et prophetiis circa materiam recuperandæ sanctæ civitatis et montis Dei Sion.* This interesting manuscript volume, now known as the *Profecias* is still preserved in the Columbian Library at Seville It contains all the

prophecies in the Bible which appear to have any bearing on the matters in hand, and is preceded by a letter addressed to the sovereigns, in which Columbus endeavoured to stir their hearts in favour of an enterprise which seemed to him to be for the good of Christendom. Many thoughtful Christians of that age besides Columbus believed with him that his discoveries were made under divine guidance, and that he was, as Jaime Ferrer, the lapidary, puts it in his letter of August 1495, the "Ambassador of God." Nor was the recovery of the holy places considered in any other light than as a practical scheme that, in the opinions of many, probably the majority of Christians, ought some day to be undertaken. Spaniards looked upon it almost as a consequence of the fall of Granada. The *Profecias* therefore, was no offspring of morbid fancies or hallucinations. It was the practical work of an able and highly imaginative man, setting forth one important argument in favour of a romantic enterprise which he had at heart, as the complement of his western discoveries. Every sentence written by the illustrious Genoese is valuable to posterity; and the *Profecias* are specially interesting, from their recording the results of deep study at a momentous period of the Admiral's life, and because the manuscript contains paragraphs and corrections in his own handwriting. In a letter to the Pope, dated February 1502, Columbus regretted that he should be unable to visit Rome, and explain his scheme for the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre personally to his Holiness.

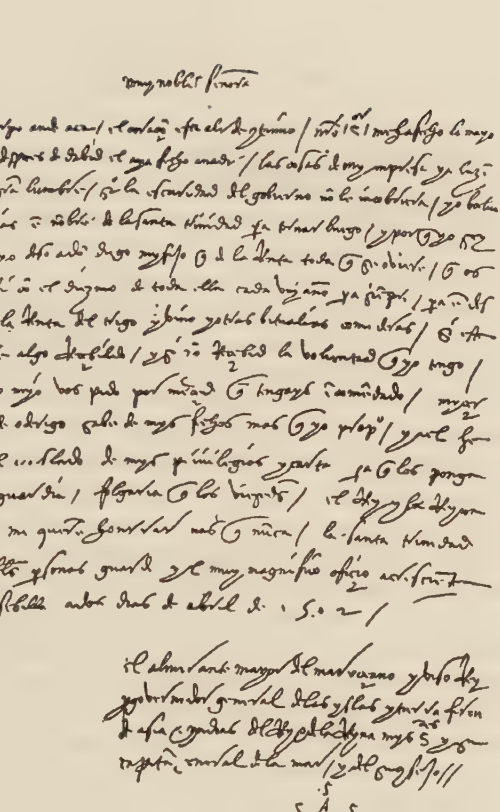
After the completion of his work on the prophecies, the Admiral reviewed the general results of all his discoveries, and was led to suspect the probability of the

existence of a strait in the western sea beyond Jamaica, leading between continental lands direct to the Indies. He had observed the existence of a continuous ocean-current always flowing westward through the channels between the windward islands. He discovered the Gulf stream. His speculations on this subject are shrewd, and fully justified by his premises. He observed that islands lying in the course of the current usually had their length pointing east and west, and from this circumstance he inferred that the current was so constant that it had worked them into their present shapes by attrition on the north and south coasts. The continent, a portion of which he had discovered at Paria, formed a southern wall for the current, while on the north Cuba was assumed to be a long promontory. Consequently, as there was no current either to the north or the south, it must flow through a strait to the westward. The argument was invulnerable except at a single point. The continental character of Cuba was a hypothesis which might or might not be correct, and if not the argument was vitiated. The insularity of Cuba was not discovered until after the death of Columbus.

The indefatigable explorer, although shattered in health, fixed his mind on the discovery of this hypothetical strait. When he submitted his plan to the sovereigns, it was received with more than complacency. Isabella always had faith in the scientific insight of the Admiral, and Ferdinand perceived the vast importance of such a discovery. In spite of the opposition of Fonseca and some members of the Council, the sovereigns granted the application of the Admiral for four ships, to be provisioned for two years.

Before starting for his last voyage Columbus devoted

Pg 217



FACSIMILE OF THE LETTER FROM COLUMBUS TO THE BANK OF ST GEORGE, APRIL 2, 1502.

MISSING
PAGE - 218 ?

Pg 219

much care and attention to his worldly affairs, as if he believed it to be more than probable that he would never return. He possessed a number of important title deeds, the concession of titles, rights, and privileges, and other documents, which it was incumbent upon him to leave in safe custody. These papers were thirty-six in number On the 5th of January 1502 the Admiral went before a notary at Seville and obtained authorisation for a copy to be made of them, which was duly attested. He afterwards added a copy of the famous bull of Alexander VI., and his letter to Doña Juana de Torres Two copies of these documents were sent to Nicolo Oderigo, the Genoese ambassador, together with two missives addressed to the Bank of St George. A third copy was intrusted to Alonzo Sanchez de Carbajal, who was the Admiral's agent in Española. A fourth copy, on parchment, was delivered to the care of the Carthusian monastery of Santa Maria de las Cuevas, outside the Triana suburb of Seville, where the Admiral's intimate friend, Father Gaspar Gorricio, was one of the monks The originals were deposited in an iron box, and placed in the crypt of the chapel of Santa Ana. They are now in the custody of the Duke of Veragua, the heir and representative of Columbus, at Madrid, and were published by Navarrete in 1825. The copy intrusted to Carbajal is lost. The two copies sent to the Genoese ambassador remained in the family of Oderigo until 1670, when they were presented to the Republic of Genoa. One is now preserved in a *Custodia*, let into the pedestal of a bust of the Admiral, in the town hall of Genoa. It is a volume beautifully written, with richly illuminated initial letters, bound in red morocco and provided with a red morocco case. The binding and the case are mentioned by

ORIGIN
and 3
COPIE

Columbus in a letter to the Bank of St. George The documents of which the volume is composed were printed by Spotorno in 1823 The other was recently discovered by Mr Harrisse in the archives of the Foreign Office at Paris, having been carried off during the French occupation of Genoa

Having made this wise provision for the preservation of documents establishing his rights and privileges, for the benefit of his sons, the Admiral made a will, signed on April 1, 1502, and deposited in the monastery of Las Cuevas, in the care of Father Gorricio. It has unfortunately been lost His mind then reverted to his beloved old home at Genoa. He earnestly desired that his countrymen should reap some benefit from his success. He therefore directed that investments should be made in the Bank of St. George at Genoa, with the object of reducing the taxes on wine, flour, and other articles of food, so as to ease the burdens of the people. The sum bequeathed was one-tenth of his entire revenues. The letter to the governors of the bank was forwarded to the Genoese ambassador, Oderigo The answer of the bank, dated December 10, 1502, gave expression to the pleasure of his countrymen at the affection and goodwill thus shown by the Admiral for his native land. There is some reason to fear that Columbus never received this answer The original letter of Columbus to the bank was found among files of old papers in 1829, and is now preserved between two glass plates in the town hall at Genoa, together with the reply.

On a blank sheet of the letter to Oderigo* there is a spirited pen-and-ink sketch which is attributed to

* It is now fastened in the end of the volume containing the concessions

TRIUMPH OF COLUMBUS.

Columbus himself. It represents a symbolical triumph of the Admiral after his great achievement Columbus is seated in a car with Providence at his side holding a sail up by the yard, while Columbus has the sheet in his hand. The spokes of the wheels are paddles which send up spray and foam from a sea in which Envy, Ignorance, and other *monstri superati* are nearly submerged. In front of the car are Constancy and Tolerance, behind it Religion; while Victory, Hope, and Fame are flying in the air. In one corner is the well-known signature of the Admiral, and beside it an explanatory note, in a later handwriting, that it is the sign with which Columbus subscribed his letters.* The sketch may have been drawn by Oderigo, but it is more likely that it was the work of the Admiral himself. If so, it shows that he had a bold, free touch, and some artistic feeling.

The last duty of the Admiral before sailing was the despatch of a letter of advice to young Diego at court. "I leave you," wrote Columbus to his eldest son, "in my place, and I wish you to use all that is mine for your own honour. All my privileges and writings are committed to the care of Father Gaspar." He then charges the young man to attend to his devotions, and to set apart a tenth of all he possesses to the service of the Lord for the necessitous poor "If you do this you will never want, because our Lord will provide for you" He also enjoins him "to be kind and courteous to all with whom he has to do, whether great or humble, for as you do to them so will God do to you. Serve the King and Queen with much love, and do not importune respecting the memorials I have left with their High-

* "Segno con che Cristoforo Colombo segneva e sotoscriveva le sue scritte"

nesses Be attentive to Beatriz Enriquez for my sake; treat her as if she was your mother, and pay her 10,000 maravedis a year, besides her pension from the dues on the shambles at Cordova. Pay your aunt, Violante Moniz, 10,000 maravedis a year Keep a careful account of your household expenses, and do nothing without the opinion and advice of Father Gaspar Gorricio Take great care of my brother Don Diego, who remains at Cadiz, out of the money that our Lord may give you, for he is my brother, and has always been most dutiful. Endeavour to obtain from their Highnesses some preferment in the Church for him" He then explains the business on which he has sent Carbajal as his factor to Española, to collect and send home his property and all that is due to him, and to pay his debts These final instructions were sent to young Diego with a father's blessing

The elder Diego Columbus, the Admiral's youngest brother, was desirous of taking priest's orders, and he received letters of naturalisation in February 1504 Having entered the Church, he lived at Seville, and died there in the house of Francisco Gorricio, brother of Father Gaspar, in 1515

On March 14, 1502, the sovereigns addressed a letter to the Admiral from Valencia de Torre, assuring him that in due time all his rights would be restored. Meanwhile he was not to touch at Española on his way out, lest his presence might cause complications He was given permission to touch there on his return voyage All his private affairs having been settled, Columbus busily occupied himself in the equipment of his last expedition He was to be accompanied by his little son Fernando, then aged fourteen, and by his faithful brother

Pg-225

the Adelantado Bartolomè, who was to be a tower of strength and support in the days of trouble and danger that were near at hand

NOTE

(1) *The Supposed Preservation of the Irons*

The story of the preservation of the chains by the Admiral, and of them having been buried with him, is not mentioned by Las Casas, Peter Martyr, Oviedo, or Bernaldez. In the Italian version of the life by Fernando Columbus there is the following passage on which the story is based: "Egli avea deliberato di voler salvar quei ceppi per reliquie e memoria del premia de suoi molti servizi, siccome anco fece egli, perciocchè io gli vidi sempre in camera cotai ferri; i quali volle che con le sue ossa fossero sepolti" (cap. lxxxv. p. 280. Ed. London, 1867). Fernando, no doubt, saw them in his father's room at Seville after his arrival in 1500. But I agree with Mr. Harrisse that it is grossly improbable that the Admiral carried such luggage about with him, a proceeding most insulting to the King, or that the irons were carried from Valladolid to Seville in his coffin.

Pg 226

CHAPTER XII

VOYAGES TO THE WEST AND CONSEQUENT ON THE ACHIEVEMENT OF COLUMBUS

1. Cabot. 2. Cortereal 3 Companions of Columbus

* The first voyage of Columbus caused a very complete revolution in the minds of cosmographers and mariners. Before that great landmark in the history of the human race was raised, their ideas were confined to coasting round the shores of an old world surrounded by the ocean. After the problem was solved, after the great achievement was done, and Columbus had thrown a light across the hitherto unpassed and unpassable ocean all was changed. Many men were ready to follow, but there was only one who could lead.

The first follower of the great discoverer of the New World was a countryman of his own, another native of the Ligurian shore. John Cabot, or Zuan Caboto in the Venetian dialect, was a Genoese who was naturalised at Venice in 1476, after a residence of fifteen years. He was a cosmographer and traveller, having extended his journeys as far as Arabia. Like all the rest of the world John Cabot was astonished at the grand achievement of his countryman. He went to Lisbon and to Seville,* and

Cabot lived in Venice for 15 yrs.

* Letter of Pedro de Ayala to the sovereigns from London, 25th July 1498. "Calendar of State Papers, Spain, I 176 77, and Harrisse's "Cabot," p 329. This letter was found at Simancas by Bergenroth in 1860.

About 1495: Cabot relocated with his family to England

heard the glorious news, with the theories of the Admiral about the territory of the Grand Khan and the rich island of Zipangu. It seemed to him to be "a thing more divine than human" * to have sailed by the west into the east. He was filled with the desire of sharing in the work of discovery, under the auspices of some other government. So he came to England, settled at Bristol with his wife and three sons in about 1495, and submitted a scheme for exploration to the government of Henry VII. On the 5th of March 1496 a patent for the discovery of unknown lands was granted to John Cabot jointly with his three sons Lewis, Sebastian, and Sancius.

NO Records of John Cabot's voyages have survive

Unfortunately no narrative of the voyages of John Cabot has been preserved, and there is not a scrap of writing either by him or by his son Sebastian. It is only possible to piece together a few meagre facts, and reports at second or third hand, from the writings of others, in which the Cabots are incidentally referred to. The actual facts are very few indeed.

John Cabot fitted out one small vessel at Bristol, which is believed to have been called the *Matthew*,† with a crew of eighteen persons. There is no evidence that his son Sebastian accompanied him. The *Matthew* sailed in May, and at five o'clock in the morning of the 24th of June 1497 land was sighted, and named "Prima Terra Vista." We learn from a copy of a *mappe-monde*‡ drawn

* Sebastian Cabot, in Ramusio

† Barrett's "History and Antiquities of Bristol" (1789), p. 172 quoting from an old manuscript, which is not, however, now forthcoming.

‡ A map was found by Von Martius in 1843 in the house of a curate in Bavaria, and deposited in the National Library of Paris in 1844, which is considered to be a copy of the *mappe-monde* drawn by Sebastian Cabot in 1544. It was reproduced by Jomard. On its sides

Pg 220

by Sebastian Cabot in 1544, that "Prima Terra Vista" was the northern point of Cape Breton Island. On the map of Michael Lok, dated 1582, in Hakluyt's "Divers Voyages," copied from a chart of Verrazzano, the inscription, "J. Gabot, 1497," is written across the land to a point named Cape Breton. John Cabot also discovered an island, named St. John, because it was seen on the same day, the 24th of June, which is identified with the Magdalen Islands. He may also have sighted Newfoundland. These are "the Londe and Isles of late founde by the said John" mentioned in the patent of 1498. An Italian named Lorenzo Pasqualigo, living in London, in a letter to his brother at Venice, after Cabot's return, said that Cabot explored the coast for 300 leagues.* But he returned in the end of July, for he received a grant of £10 on August 10th† ("To him who found the new Ile, £10"), so that there would have been no time to make this 300 leagues' cruise, and barely time to return to Bristol, for a little craft like the *Matthew*. Consequently the continent of America was not then discovered.

Hudson was not discovered at that time.

are two tables with seventeen legends in Spanish and Latin. There was a copy of this map, or part of it, prepared by Clement Adams in 1549 which was hanging in the gallery at Whitehall in Hakluyt's time, now lost. Hakluyt copied the legend on it, which is the same as No. 8 legend on the map at Paris. It mentions the discovery of "Prima Vista" on June 24th and of St. John's Isle, but the year is 1494 in both. This must be a printer's error, iiii. for vii., as Mr. Major suggested.

Willes (editor of "Eden's Voyages," ed. 1579) mentions another map, which he calls "Cabot's card or table," in possession of the Earl of Bedford at Cheynes, proving the existence of the Strait of Anian between 61° and 64° N. It also is lost.

* "Calendar of State Papers," Venice, I. 262.

† "Privy Purse Expenses, Henry VII.," August 10th, 1497, quoted by Mr. Dean in Winsor's "Narrative and Critical History of America."

The first voyage of John Cabot in 1497 in the *Matthew* may thus be summed up. He sailed from Bristol in May, reached the north point of Cape Breton, and landed there on June 24, sighted the Magdalen Islands and perhaps Newfoundland, and returned to Bristol in the end of July. Pasqualigo says that Cabot planted on the beach where he landed the flags of England and of St. Mark, he being a citizen of Venice, and a large cross.* On his return he reported, in imitation of Columbus, that he had reached the territory of the Grand Khan. He prepared a chart of his discoveries and also a solid globe.† Great honour was paid to him; he dressed in silk, and was styled the great Admiral,‡ and in December 1497 a pension of £20 a year was granted to him, to be paid out of the customs receipts of Bristol.§

John Cabot proposed to lead a larger expedition across the ocean in the following year, and to discover the rich island of Zipangu, for he adopted all the ideas of Columbus. On February 3, 1498, a patent was issued‖ authorising John Cabot alone, there being no mention of the sons this time, to take six ships to the land discovered by him in 1497, and to enter men. He appears to have sailed in the summer of 1498. All we know for certain is that he had not returned in September. On this occasion his son Sebastian probably

* Pasqualigo *ubi sup*

† Raimondo de Soncino (envoy of the Duke of Milan), August 24, 1497. "Calendar of State Papers," Venice, i. 260

‡ Pasqualigo.

§ Collection of Privy Seals Record Office. No. 4, copied by Franklin B. Dexter of Yale College, and quoted by Mr. Deane. Winsor's "Narrative and Critical History of America," iii. 56

‖ First printed by Biddle in his "Memoir of Sebastian Cabot" (1831), p. 76.

Pq 230

accompanied him. John Ruysch, the eminent Dutch geographer, "whose map," in the Ptolemy of 1508, says Nordenskiold, "forms an epoch in the development of cartography,"* may possibly have accompanied John Cabot in his second expedition. He sailed from England to the east coast of the new land, saw many islands, and reached 53°, and the most probable expedition in which he could have done this was that of John Cabot. We know from a letter of Pedro de Ayala, the Spanish envoy in London,† and from Stow's Chronicle,‡ that the expedition of Cabot sailed in the summer of 1498, and that it had not returned in the following September But we know nothing more There is no authentic account of the proceedings of the expedition, and no record of its return As there are no dates respecting the second voyage of 1498, and no definite facts, it cannot be said that Cabot discovered the American continent before Columbus reached Paria in July 1498 We know nothing more of John Cabot, of where or when he died, or when his ships came back

Pedro de Ayala saw the map of John Cabot, and without doubt he obtained a copy and sent it to Spain. There is evidence of this on the famous map which Juan de la Cosa drew in 1500, and in the instructions to Alonzo de Ojeda in 1502 On the map of Juan de la Cosa, Cape Race is called "C. de Ynglaterra," there are sixteen names apparently translated from names on a

* Facsimile Atlas, p 67

† Pedro de Ayala to Ferdinand and Isabella, July 25, 1498 "Calendar of State Papers," Spain, i 176, 177. This letter was found by Bergenroth at Simancas in 1860

‡ Stow's Chronicle (1580), year 1498, from Fabyan Stow gave the passage from Fabyan to Hakluyt. But there is no such passage in any edition of Fabyan's Chronicle.

Pg 231

map by Cabot, and beyond them to the west is written "Mar descubierta por Yngleses."

Sebastian, the son of John Cabot, left England, and held employment under the Spanish government from 1512 to 1547, when he was allowed to come back to England, a very old man. It is said that Sebastian commanded an English expedition in 1517. But this is impossible. He was then fully occupied in Spain, and in 1518 he was appointed "chief pilot and examiner," residing at Seville Our only knowledge of the proceedings of the expedition of John Cabot in 1498 comes from alleged conversations of Sebastian when in Spain, recorded from memory many years afterwards at second or third hand. There is not a syllable direct from Sebastian himself. There is a statement by Peter Martyr in his Decades, published in 1516, who says that he was intimate with Sebastian; another recorded by Ramusio as having been made by the guest of a friend, and which he wrote down afterwards from recollection; another which Ramusio himself had received many years before from Sebastian in a letter; and a fourth in Gomara's History. Galvano, the Portuguese writer, also says something about Cabot, but he is evidently quoting from Gomara.

Peter Martyr's version is that Cabot sailed northwards in July, until he met large masses of ice, and the days were very long; that he named the land "Baccalaos" because there were so many fish that they sometimes stopped the ship, which the natives called by that name; that he went south as far as the latitude of Gibraltar, and so far west that Cuba was on his left hand. The guest of Ramusio's friend, Fracastor, said that he once had an interview with Sebastian Cabot, at Seville, who

Pg 232

told him that he went with two ships as far north as 56°, then southwards as far as Florida, when his provisions failed. The recollection of Ramusio himself was that Sebastian wrote to him many years before, saying that he went to 67° 30′ N. and on June 11 he found the sea still open, and expected to reach Cathay, but was hindered by a mutiny. The story in Gomara is that Sebastian Cabot fitted out two ships at his own expense, and went to the Cape of Labrador in 58° N., though he himself says much more, where there was much ice and long days in July. Turning west he refreshed at Baccalaos, and then followed the coast as far south as 38° N. Galvano gives Cabot's extreme north at 60°.

** All these stories are unauthentic and unreliable, and it will be observed that everything is attributed to Sebastian, while John Cabot, who commanded both expeditions, is not mentioned. If Sebastian ignored the position and services of his father in making these statements, and took the credit to himself, his conduct forms a strong contrast to that of Fernando, the son of Columbus, whose filial piety is his best claim to remembrance. *Baccalaos* is not a native name, and it certainly was not given by Cabot. *Bacallaos* (whence *Baccalaos*) is the Basque word for stock fish, and the hardy Basque fishermen possibly frequented the Newfoundland Banks long years before the time of Cabot. With regard to the most northern latitude reached by Cabot there is no agreement. One gives 67° 30′, another 60°, another 58°, another 56°, and Ruysch has 53°. But there is a general agreement that Cabot went north until he met with ice, and that then he sailed southwards until his provisions failed and he was forced to return to Bristol.

To sum up, all we know with certainty is that an

expedition commanded by John Cabot left Bristol in 1498. It is probably true that he sailed north until he met with ice off the coast of Labrador, most likely in 53° north, as given by Beneventanus on the authority of Ruysch, and that he then shaped a southerly course until he was obliged to return. The Gibraltar latitude would place him near Cape Hatteras.

It is very much to be regretted that there are no authentic accounts of these interesting voyages of John Cabot. When his son Sebastian returned to England he received a pension, and as a very old man he was Governor of the Muscovy Company. In the time of Queen Mary he was deprived of half his pension, which was given to one W. Worthington. This was in 1557, when his age was about eighty-four It is suggested by Biddle that, on Sebastian's death, the time and place of which are unknown, his maps and papers were delivered by Worthington to Philip of Spain, who carried them off. This would account for the total absence of all authentic information respecting the expeditions of John Cabot.

The other voyages which, like those of Cabot, were the direct consequence of the achievement of Columbus, appear to have been undertaken by the Portuguese Government with a less ingenuous object. The English were under no obligation to recognise the preposterous claims of Spain founded on the Papal bull. The Portuguese were under such obligation. By the Treaty of Tordesillas, signed on the 7th of June 1494, the Portuguese acknowledged the binding character of the bull on the line being moved so much further west as to fall 370 leagues west of the Cape de Verde Islands. They were left a fair and wide field for discovery, settlement,

P9-234

and commerce in the east. But they were not satisfied, and sought to enforce their extreme rights on or, if possible, beyond the dividing line

The King of Portugal granted a concession for the discovery of lands to the north-west to Gaspar Cortereal, the youngest of three sons of Joao Vaz Cortereal, who was captain of the islands of Terceira and St. George in the Azores Gaspar was about fifty years of age when he undertook this enterprise, and no particulars of his previous career have come down to us. He left Lisbon in a well-equipped vessel, in the summer of 1500;* or he left Terceira with two vessels according to another account,† and, steering north, sighted the south coast of Greenland, observing its serrated mountains, but he did not land.‡ It was supposed to be a point of Asia. Many icebergs were met with, and good fresh water was found on them, where the ice was melted by the sun. Cortereal then coasted along the whole eastern side of Newfoundland, and named it "Terra Verde," because the land was covered with trees suitable for making masts. It was afterwards called "Terra Corterealis," while some map-makers placed that name on the Labrador coast. Cortereal reached 50 N., and returned with several natives and some white bears.§ Only very meagre accounts of this voyage exist in the chronicle of Damien de Goes and in Galvano.

In the following year a second expedition was fitted out under the command of Gaspar Cortereal, consisting of three vessels, to follow up the work achieved in 1500.

* Damian de Goes

† Galvano

‡ Legend on the Cantino map

§ Legend on a Portuguese portolano of the sixteenth century, referred to by Harrisse

They probably sailed on the 30th of April 1501 * Two of the vessels returned on the 9th and 11th of October respectively; the third, with Cortereal on board, never came back, and his fate remained unknown His brother Miguel went in search of him in the following year, but he, too, was never heard of again.

A few details of the second voyage of Cortereal are given in two letters written by Pietro Pasqualigo, the Venetian envoy at Lisbon, on the 18th and 19th of October 1501—one to the Seigneury of Venice, the other to his brother; and in a letter written by Alberto Cantino, an Italian then at Lisbon, to the Duke of Ferrara, on the 17th of October. Cantino heard the captain of one of the vessels make his report to the King of Portugal The account of the Italian letter-writer was that Cortereal had discovered a coast line, which he sailed along for 600 or 700 miles, bearing from Lisbon between west and north-west, about 3000 miles distant. This would be the North American coast from about Chesapeake Bay to Cape Breton. In the southern part there were delicious fruits of various kinds. Along the coast there were many large rivers, and at the northern end there was much fish; but they could not reach the land discovered during the first voyage, which was further north, by reason of the ice, or more probably the fogs. Cortereal himself pressed onwards and was lost The two

* Damian de Goes says May 15th. Pasqualigo and Cantino say that one vessel returned on October 9th, after an absence of nine months, which would make January the 9th the date of sailing But Mr. Harrisse has discovered documents in the archives of the Torre do Tombo, including a receipt for biscuits, signed by Cortereal on April 25, 1501. He no doubt sailed a few days afterwards. As one point on the land he discovered is named the Cape of the last of April, he probably sailed on April 30, 1501.

other vessels brought back seven natives, who were minutely described by Pasqualigo and Cantino

But the most important record of the second voyage of Corte-real consists of a map which Cantino caused to be prepared by a Portuguese draughtsman at Lisbon in

1502, and sent to the Duke of Ferrara It is now preserved at Modena and a facsimile has been published by Mr Harrisse with his work on the Corte-real voyages. The Cantino map is a plane chart, with the equator, the tropic of Cancer, and the Papal dividing line down the

Pg 237

Atlantic as a single meridian It shows the eastern coasts of Europe and Africa, and the discoveries of Columbus and his school of pilots, the whole richly painted and illuminated. But the object of the Cantino map was to illustrate the discoveries made during the two voyages of Cortereal. The results of the first voyage are shown by the southern part of Greenland with Cape Farewell, called "A ponta d" (Assia?), and by a line of coast, much broken by inlets, representing the east coast of Newfoundland It is called "Terra del Rey de Portugall," and there is a legend to the effect that it was discovered by Gaspar de Cortereal, who was lost when the other vessels returned A forest of tall trees is painted on the land The remarkable point connected with this discovery is that it is placed just to the eastward of the Papal dividing line This is moving Newfoundland over 300 miles too far east in the Portuguese interest; but, as longitudes were observed in those days, it may have been done without *mala fides*.

The results of the second voyage of Cortereal are shown on the Cantino map by a coast bearing from west to west by north of Portugal, and extending for 600 miles, exactly in accordance with the accounts given by Pasqualigo and Cantino. It is, no doubt, a copy of the rough chart drawn by the pilot of one of the vessels, with twenty-two Portuguese names of rivers and capes, six of which are unintelligible, doubtless owing to the original document being injured by damp or rubbing at these points There is a "Rio de los Lagartos" (river of lizards), near where Cabot has a "Cabo de Lizarte" on the map of Juan de la Cosa. The southern point appears to be the entrance of the Gulf of Chesapeake, with the islands on the east side; and the northern point would

then be Cape Breton, where the attempt to reach Newfoundland was given up by the two vessels which returned, while Cortereal himself went on into the fogs and was lost The draughtsman placed the West Indian Islands much too far to the north, and the Cortereal coast-line is made to run north and south, to the west of Cuba Owing to the removal of Newfoundland to the east, while the North American coast receives no eastward trend, an excessive space is left between them. This, however, was not due to Cortereal or his pilots, but to the theories of the draughtsman employed by Cantino (1) It was felt that this coast-line examined by Cortereal in his second voyage was much too far to the westward to be claimed by Portugal, and accordingly no legend to that effect appears on this part of the map

Hand of Columbus

The Spanish voyages to the New World undertaken in the lifetime of Columbus, but in breach of his rights as Admiral of the Ocean, were for the most part commanded by men who had been trained by the Admiral himself—such as Pinzon, Niño, La Cosa, and Ojeda The work done by them, and the discoveries made, like those of Cabot and Cortereal, are the direct outcome of his genius, and must be included among the results and consequences of his first voyage across the Atlantic When Columbus sent home his report of the discovery of the Gulf of Paria and the pearl-fishery, accompanied by an excellent chart, Bishop Fonseca easily persuaded King Ferdinand that great gain might accrue from licensing the voyages of independent adventurers who would reap the fruits of the Admiral's discoveries The breach of faith did not trouble either Ferdinand or Fonseca, and to the latter this perfidy was especially pleasing, because it gratified his malice.

Pg 239

Alonzo de Ojeda had returned from Española, and Fonseca tempted him with the prospective wealth of the pearl-fishery. The daring adventurer readily closed with so attractive a proposal, and he was furnished with the Admiral's chart in order to enable him to find his way to Paria and infringe on the privileges of his old chief. A worse man to command an expedition could scarcely have been found. Brave to recklessness, enterprising and daring, he was an admirable second, and was well fitted for the conduct of such wild exploits as the capture of Caonabó. But he had none of the qualities necessary for a leader. Juan de la Cosa, the able cartographer, accompanied Ojeda as pilot, and the provision merchant, Amerigo Vespucci, was also taken on board, probably as a volunteer. Four vessels were fitted out at the port of Santa Maria, in the bay of Cadiz, and Fonseca furnished every assistance in his power

The expedition of Ojeda sailed from Cadiz on the 18th or 20th of May 1499, and, after touching at Gomera, the adventurers endeavoured to follow the track of the Admiral across the Atlantic, but with indifferent success. They struck a bad landfall, and, instead of sighting Trinidad, they made the coast somewhere near Surinam They coasted along, in sight of land, finding the water quite fresh off the mouths of the Essequibo and Orinoco, until they entered the Gulf of Paria, and anchored off the mouth of the river Guarapiche Here they found a pacific race of Indians, with whom they communicated, and who gave them a delicious fermented liquor made from fruit. Leaving the gulf by the Boca del Dragon, Ojeda passed the island of Margarita and Cape Codera on the mainland, and came to a port near Puerto Cabello, where there was an encounter with the natives, and

twenty Spaniards were wounded. The place was named "Puerto Flechado," in memory of the arrow wounds. The vessels moved to Coro, where they remained twenty days while the men recovered from their wounds, and then stretched over to the island of Curaçoa, which was named "Isla de los Gigantes," for some reason not clearly explained. Rounding Cape San Roman, at the north end of the peninsula of Paraguana, they entered a large gulf, where they saw villages with houses built out over the sea on stakes, and the communication between the different habitations effected by canoes. From this circumstance the name of little Venice—"Venezuela"—was given to the country and the gulf. The native name was Coquivacoa.[2] They explored the shores, and entering a strait at the south end on the 24th of August, they discovered the great inland gulf of Maracaibo, which they named "San Bartolomè." The Indians were reported to be more handsome than any that had been seen in the New World. The furthest western point reached by the expedition was the Cabo de la Vela, whence, on August 30th, they commenced their homeward voyage. Entering the port of Yaquimo, in Española, in September 1499, the presence of Ojeda caused some trouble and anxiety in a colony where the mutiny of Roldan had just been appeased. On the return voyage Ojeda passed through the Bahama group, seizing 230 of the wretched islanders as slaves, and arrived at Cadiz, in the middle of June 1500, where he sold those who had survived the horrors of the passage.

Alonso Niño of Moguer, the expert pilot and companion of Columbus in all his voyages, also obtained a licence, and was fitting out a caravel of 50 tons at

Pg 241

ALONSO

Palos, with the pecuniary aid of one Cristoval Guerra, at the very time when Ojeda was sailing from Cadiz Crossing the bar of Saltes, this second interloper followed close on the heels of the first, and was a far better seaman. He reached the Gulf of Paria only fifteen days after Ojeda. In passing out of the Boca del Dragon the caravel was surrounded by a fleet of canoes manned by warlike Caribs who were only driven off by a discharge of lombards. Niño proceeded to the island of Margarita, and his people were the first Spaniards who ever landed on it. Some pearls were obtained, and the caravel then sailed across to the mainland at Curiana, now called Cumana. They were so well received by the amiable inhabitants, that Niño and Guerra remained at Cumana for three months, and saw the process of pearl fishing. They obtained pearls as well as a few gold ornaments during their stay. Niño sailed westward from Cumana to a place where he heard there was gold, called Cauchieto, which he reached on the 1st of November 1499. Here more gold and many fine pearls were obtained, and a further supply was got on the return of the caravel to Cumana; altogether over one hundred and fifty marcs of pearls. On the 13th of February 1500 Niño made sail for Spain, and, after a voyage of sixty days, arrived at Bayona in Galicia. Niño was arrested on an accusation of having concealed some of the treasure, but he was released, and he enjoyed the reputation of having made the most lucrative voyage to the New World up to that time.

Soon after the departure of Ojeda and Niño, a licence for fitting out an expedition was given to Vicente Yanez Pinzon, another companion of Columbus. Aided by relations and friends, Pinzon fitted out four caravels, and

sailed from Palos early in December 1499. After leaving the Cape Verde Islands he sailed for many hundreds of miles to the south-west until he lost sight of the pole star. On the 20th of January 1500 he sighted the Brazilian Cape of San Agustin in 8° 20′ 41″ S., where he landed and took possession in the names of the sovereigns of Spain. Pinzon was the first to cross the equator and visit land in the New World, within the southern hemisphere. He discovered Brazil three months before Cabral, whose fleet did not reach this coast until the following April. Pinzon then followed the coast northward to the equator, and, landing on a point of land, some of his people had a fierce encounter with the natives, in which eight or ten Spaniards were killed. Forty leagues further north the water was found to be quite fresh far out at sea. He discovered the mouth of a mighty river more than thirty leagues in width, afterwards named the Amazons.

Pinzon continued his northward course, entered the Gulf of Paria passing out by the Boca del Dragon, and reached Española on the 23rd of June 1500, after having discovered a vast extent of the east coast of the New World. Two of the caravels were lost in a storm, but the other two arrived safely at Palos on the 30th of September. There was a great mortality in this expedition, but Pinzon had the glory of having been the first to cross the equator on the western side of the Atlantic, and of having discovered Brazil and the mouth of the Amazons. He brought home 3000 lbs. of dye-wood, and specimens of plants and animals.

When Pinzon sailed from Palos, two vessels were being fitted out there by Diego de Lepe for a similar voyage. Bartolomé Roldan, a companion of Columbus in his first

Pg 243

and second voyages, was pilot. Lepe sailed about a month after Pinzon, and followed the same course, until he sighted the Cape of San Agustin. He then doubled the Cape, and ascertained that the coast continued to run in a south-westerly direction. He prepared a chart of his discoveries, but the date of his return is not recorded. Several unrecorded expeditions appear to have sailed from the ports of Andalusia at this time, in the hope of sharing the good fortune of Niño and Guerra. A comendador, named Alonso Velez de Mendoza, with two caravels, is supposed to have followed in the track of Lepe. Cristoval Guerra also made a second voyage with his brother Luis, who found the means. They sailed from San Lucar with two caravels, passed through the Gulf of Paria, and traded for pearls and gold at Cumana. Las Casas accuses them of having treated the natives with great cruelty. They brought home dye-wood, pearls, gold ornaments, and a number of Indians to sell for slaves, arriving some time in November 1501.

A more important voyage was that undertaken by Rodrigo de Bastidas, a native of the Triana suburb of Seville. Juan de la Cosa was his pilot, and Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, the future discoverer of the South Sea, was one of his crew. He sailed from Cadiz with two vessels in October 1500, and reached the mainland somewhere near the Gulf of Venezuela. Rounding the Cabo de la Vela, the most western point hitherto reached by Ojeda, he passed along the coast by Santa Marta, the mouth of the Magdalena, and Cartagena, until he reached the Gulf of Uraba or Darien, which he explored. Proceeding on his course he passed Capes Tiburon and San Blas in Darien, his furthest point being the port of Nombre de Dios, or Puerto de Bastimentos, as it was

named by Columbus. This was a most successful voyage. Intercourse with the natives was always of a friendly character, and the whole conduct of the expedition reflects great credit on Bastidas and La Cosa. The ships, however, were much injured by the borings of the *Teredo navalis*, and it was not without difficulty that they were got across to Jamaica to refit.

Bastidas reached the western coast of Española, but encountered a series of storms, and eventually lost his ships with their valuable cargo. A good deal of gold and many pearls were, however, saved, with which Bastidas and his people made their way to San Domingo. Unfortunately the infamous Bobadilla was in power, and the shipwrecked navigator did not escape from persecution and false accusations. But he was fully acquitted on his return to Spain in September 1502, after an absence of close upon two years.

During the absence of Bastidas, a licence was granted to Alonzo de Ojeda to fit out a second expedition, and to form a settlement in the province of Coquivacoa or Venezuela, of which he was to be governor. He intended to have ten ships but he could only collect funds to fit out four. Ojeda himself was on board the *Santa Maria de la Antigua*, with Garcia de Ocampo as master. The *Santa Maria de la Granada* was commanded by Juan de Vergara, the caravel *Magdalena*, by a nephew of the governor named Pedro de Ojeda, and the *Santa Ana* by Hernando de Guevara. The expedition sailed from Cadiz in January 1502, and reached the Gulf of Paria, where the ships were hove down and cleaned. They then proceeded on the voyage, and after passing the island of Margarita the *Santa Ana* lost sight of the rest of the squadron. Next day Guevara went on to the port near

Pg 245

Point Codera, which had been mentioned as a rendezvous; but there being no signs of his consorts, he thought he must have passed them in the night. He determined to wait for them, anchoring under the shelter of two bare rocks, about three leagues from the land. The rocks were frequented by hundreds of sea-birds, and some of the ship's boys, to amuse the captain, who was ill, got leave to go and hunt the birds, bringing on board forty very large ones after a quarter of an hour.

Vergara sailed next day, though it was not until two more days had passed that he at length found Ojeda at port Codera, but only with his own ship. The other two were still missing. After about a fortnight of hide-and-seek the squadron was united. It was then arranged that villages should be attacked in the province of Curiana, which they named "Val Fermoso," and everything seized that was likely to be useful to the settlement. They took hammocks, cotton, and even some girls to be the slaves of Vergara and his friend Ocampo. Their greatest want was a supply of provisions, and it was arranged that Vergara, in the *Santa Ana*, should be sent to Jamaica to buy as much food as possible, and return either to the Gulf of Maracaibo or to the Cabo de la Vela, where the other three ships would wait for him for two months. This was in April 1502.

Ojeda, with Ocampo and Guevara, then proceeded to Curaçoa (which they called "Isla de los Gigantes") and thence to Coquivacoa, but the land looked poor and unproductive, so they went on to Bahia Honda, in the Guajira peninsula, which they named "Puerto de Santa Cruz." Here they found a Spaniard named Juan de Buenaventura, who had been put on shore at Citarma (now Santa Marta), in the province of the Sierra Nevada,

by Bastidas. He had been a year with the Indians, learning their language. The port of Santa Cruz is twenty-five miles to the east of Cabo de la Vela. Having fixed upon this place as the site of the new settlement, they began to clear the ground of trees and bushes, and to build forts, after overcoming the resistance of the natives. These forts, three in number, were placed under Guevara, Ocampo, and a servant of Ojeda named Cueva. The lombards were mounted in them, and their main object was to protect a store-house containing the provisions, and the box of gold and pearls that had been collected partly by barter, partly by violence. The supply of food was running short, and, as Vergara did not return from Jamaica after a month, the pilot Juan Lopez was sent in search of him on board the caravel *Magdalena*. The people were now weary of the business, half starved and discontented. Vergara returned at last and conspired with Ocampo against their chief, accusing Ojeda of keeping most of the treasure for himself, and of having caused the death of many Spaniards by his cruel treatment of the Indians, which made them hostile.

In June 1502 the malcontents arrested Ojeda and put him in irons, intending to deliver him to the governor of Española for judgment. Leaving Santa Cruz in September, the squadron arrived at the port of Hamgueyaga in Española and Vergara handed over Ojeda as a prisoner to the comendador Gallego. The box of treasure remained in possession of Vergara. Ojeda was sent to San Domingo, and the suit between him and his captains commenced in December. Ojeda appealed against the sentence to the sovereigns in Council, who acquitted him and ordered that all his property should be restored. It is unknown when these adventurers

Pg 247

returned to Spain, but the expedition was a complete failure, and showed Ojeda's unfitness for command.

These voyages, undertaken between the years 1499 and 1504, completed the discovery of the whole coast of the continent from Cape San Agustin, 8° south of the line, to beyond the Gulf of Darien. The discoverers were the companions of Columbus, men who had been trained under his eye, and raised to their positions through his kindly patronage *. One and all followed in his wake, making for his discovery in the Gulf of Paria, and merely extending a knowledge of the coast line on either side. All this was in fact supplementary to the work of the Admiral himself, and rightly belongs to the record of his services to geography. To a great extent it preceded the date of his last voyage, and falls into its place as in some sort introductory to that final effort. A notice of the discoveries of Bastidas is especially necessary as a prelude to the last voyage, because the connection of the Admiral's work with that of Bastidas completed the fruitless search for a strait.

NOTES

(1) *The coast-line of North America on the Cantino map*

The Cantino map was drawn to illustrate the discoveries of Corte-real. The two new coast-lines shown upon it, one being the east side of Newfoundland and the other being 600 miles of the coast of North America, must therefore be assumed to represent those discoveries, unless some very strong reason can be produced to the contrary. The 600 miles of coast of North America on the map fairly agree with the descriptions of the Italian letter-

* "Los mas que despues descubrieron eran criados, pilotos, y marineros del Almirante." Evidence of Carbajal, Navarrete, II. 587.

writers, as a coast 2800 miles from Lisbon, with a bearing between west and north west This is clear enough. Yet Mr Harrisse maintains that this new coast, first shown on the Cantino map, is not intended to represent the discovery of Cortereal He thinks that it was a discovery made between 1500, when the map of Juan de la Cosa was drawn which does not show it, and 1502, by some unknown navigator of unknown nationality, but presumably Spanish The reason which Mr. Harrisse gives for believing that this coast-line is not intended to show a discovery of Cortereal is that it is placed at such an immense distance from Newfoundland, and that Cortereal never could have made such a blunder (*Les Corte-Real*, p. 140) But the answer is that Cortereal was dead long before the map was drawn The charts of the pilots were placed in the hands of the draughtsman, and he alone was responsible for the positions of the coast-lines portrayed on those charts when he transferred them to his general map of the world He had to place Newfoundland much too far to the east for political reasons He placed the North American coast too far to the west to comply with his notions of its position with reference to the West Indian islands, which are called "the Antilles" for the first time on the Cantino map But if he had given an easterly trend to the coast, instead of giving it a north and south trend, it would not have been very much out The draughtsman's worst blunder was in placing Cuba and the other West Indian islands very much too far north

The objection of Mr Harrisse is thus fully met, and there appears to be no other reason for doubting that this 600 miles of the coast of North America is intended to represent the 600 miles of coast west of Lisbon, which was explored by Cortereal in 1502

(4) *On the statement of Navarrete that Ojeda found Englishmen at Coquivacoa.*

Navarrete makes the remarkable statement that Ojeda in his first voyage found certain Englishmen in the neighbourhood of Coquivacoa (III 41). The only ground for this statement is a passage in the instructions given to Ojeda before sailing on his second voyage. He is told to continue his discoveries towards the part where the English may make discoveries, and to set up marks with the royal arms (III 86), that the progress

Pg 249

of the English in that direction may be checked Ayala, the Spanish ambassador in London, had sent a report of the despatch of the expedition of John Cabot in 1498, which accounts for these instructions, given as a precaution in the event of encroachments on the part of the English The vast distance between the land which Cabot intended to seek and the coast of Venezuela, with the Caribbean Sea and Gulf of Mexico intervening, was not then understood Of course the English were never within thousands of miles of Coquivacoa, but it was a curious mistake for Navarrete to have made See also Biddle's "Memoir of Sebastian Cabot," p. 96, and App B p 307.

CHAPTER XIII

THE LAST VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY.

THE mind of Columbus was as bright and imaginative, his intellect as clear as in the days of his prime, when he set forth on his last voyage. But his body was worn out by incessant watching, anxiety, and tropical fevers. He suffered from ophthalmia and gout in its severest form. Physically he was quite unfit to endure the hardships of a voyage of discovery, but his ardent spirit could not be restrained. The self-denying affection of his gallant brother the Adelantado, is most touching. He did not wish to enter upon such an undertaking, but he would not allow the Admiral, in his enfeebled state, to go alone. His little son Fernando was sure to be a comfort to him, although he was also a cause of deep anxiety in times of danger and hardship.

Columbus wished to have built new vessels on a design of his own, but this was impossible owing to want of funds. He therefore bought four caravels at Seville, and provisioned them with great care, having suffered much in previous voyages from the bad condition of the food supplied by the contractors. The Admiral hoisted his flag on board the *Capitana*, a vessel of seventy tons, and sailed in her with his little son, the captain being a loyal man named Diego Tristan, and the master and chief pilot were two brothers, Ambrosio and

Juan Sanchez. The surgeon was a Valencian apothecary named Bernal, an ill-conditioned fellow

Morales, the royal treasurer, had made a special request to the Admiral that he would find places in the expedition for two brothers of his wife, named Porras. In an evil hour Columbus good-naturedly consented, for they proved to be mutinous scoundrels Francisco Porras was made captain of the *Santiago de Palos*, and his brother Diego accompanied him as royal inspector and accountant. Don Diego Mendez, a very gallant and loyal gentleman, sailed in the same ship as a volunteer. The worst ship was the *Gallega*, of sixty tons, and the Adelantado, an admirable navigator, went in her Her captain was Pedro de Terreros, one of the good men, loyal and true, who stuck to his beloved chief for better or for worse. He had been with the Admiral as his steward in the first, second, and third voyages Diego de Salcedo, the Admiral's other servant in the first voyage, was now zealously assisting Carbajal in managing his old chief's affairs in Española, and was destined to be of essential service in the coming time of trouble The fourth ship, called the *Vizcaina*, of only fifty tons, was commanded by a Genoese friend of the Admiral named Bartolomè Fieschi, a most honourable and gallant officer of ancient lineage Altogether there were 143 souls embarked in the four vessels—25 officers, 13 volunteers, 2 trumpeters, 41 seamen, and 62 boys, including young Fernando Among these there were eight Genoese, countrymen of the Admiral

On the 3rd of April the expedition left Seville, and dropped down to San Lucar, proceeding thence to Cadiz There the Admiral joined, and when on the point of sailing he heard that the Portuguese garrison of Arzilla,

on the coast of Morocco, was being closely besieged by the infidels. He generously resolved to hurry to the help of the Christians, and sailed from Cadiz with his four little vessels on the 9th * or 11th † of May 1503. Arriving off Arzilla he found that the Moors had raised the siege. The Portuguese were, however, much gratified at his proffered aid, and he found among the garrison some relations of his Portuguese wife, Filipa Moñiz, who were very hospitable. On the same day he left Arzilla, and arrived at Grand Canary on the 20th of May, where he remained for five days, filling up with provisions, wood, and water. He also took a last opportunity of writing to his friend, Father Gaspar Gorricio, asking him to watch over the welfare of his son Diego. At sunset of the 25th sail was once more made, and a course was shaped for the Indies. A most delightful voyage across the Atlantic, running pleasantly before the trades, brought them to an island called Martinino on the 15th of June. This island was probably St Lucia, and, if so, they anchored in Gros Ilet Bay, well known in after years as the favourite rendezvous of Lord Rodney's fleet. The Admiral refreshed his people here for three days, giving leave for men and boys to go on shore to wash their clothes. Thence he shaped a course to Santa Cruz and Puerto Rico, and on the 24th he steered direct for San Domingo.

Ovando had arrived at San Domingo on the 15th of the preceding April, and immediately arrested Bobadilla and the mutineer Roldan, to be sent to Spain for trial. They were allowed to take their ill-gotten riches with them. Antonio de Torres expeditiously prepared his ships for the return voyage, and he was entrusted with

* Las Casas, iii. p. 28. † Porras in Navarrete i. p. 282.

Pg 253

the largest nugget of gold that had ever been found It weighed 35 lbs As many as thirty-two vessels were prepared for the voyage Bobadilla, Roldan, and the unfortunate cacique, Guarionex, who had long been a prisoner, were on board one ship, and it is believed that upwards of 200,000 *castellanos* of gold were embarked.

The great fleet was ready to sail when the little squadron of Columbus appeared off the harbour. The Admiral had no intention of touching at San Domingo on his way out, but he was compelled to seek assistance owing to the unseaworthy condition of the *Gallega* She was a wretched sailer, and dangerously crank. Her captain, Terreros, was sent in a boat to request that Ovando would allow the Admiral to buy another vessel out of the great number in the harbour, or to exchange the *Gallega* for one better suited for the perilous service on which he was engaged. Ovando refused all assistance, and sent back Terreros with a message that the Admiral must continue his voyage with the same vessels he had brought out from Spain. Columbus received this brutal answer with the patience and equanimity which had become a part of his nature. But he found himself obliged to send in Terreros once more, and this time it was a message of warning The great experience of those seas possessed by the Admiral, and his unerring instinct, enabled him to detect the signs of an approaching hurricane He communicated his forecast to Ovando, and urged him to detain the fleet in harbour until the danger was over Refused shelter at San Domingo, the Admiral then sought refuge in the little port of Azua, to the westward During the first hours of the hurricane the four little vessels remained at anchor together.

When the force of the wind increased all but the *Capitana* were driven out to sea and the *Gallega*, in great danger, was saved through the excellent seamanship of the Adelantado. When the storm abated they reassembled, without the loss of a man, and with slight damage to sails and rigging. These frail little boats escaped almost by a miracle. One seaman and two boys deserted, but otherwise Columbus sailed from the inhospitable shores of the island he had discovered and settled without any loss.

Very different was the fate of the returning fleet. Ovando gave no heed to the message of Columbus, and sent the fleet to sea in disregard of his warning. The thirty-two vessels sailed from San Domingo on the 1st of July, and they were scarcely out of sight of land when the full force of the hurricane burst upon them. The largest ship had not time even to shorten sail, and went to the bottom with the infamous wretch Bobadilla, the miscreant Roldan, the ill-fated chief Guarionex, and a vast amount of treasure, including the famous nugget. More than twenty vessels met the same fate, the rest were scattered and disabled. One small caravel, called the *Gallega*, was able to continue the voyage, and brought the news of the catastrophe to Spain. She also brought some of the property of Columbus, about 4000 dollars, which his agent Carbajal had succeeded in collecting. It was the only treasure that was saved. There was not a man in those days who failed to see the finger of God in this most striking retribution. The faithful servant of his Lord was preserved in safety with all his people, and even his treasure. His persecutors, with their ill-gotten wealth, were destroyed in the same furious hurricane which Columbus and his people rode out in safety.

Continuing on his adventurous voyage, the Admiral came in sight of the wooded island of Guanaja, off the coast of Honduras, on the 30th of July 1502. He gave it the name of "Isla de los Piños." While the explorers were on shore, about to return to the ship, a very large canoe came in sight, with a great number of oars, and a sort of cabin built up in the centre, roofed with palm leaves, so that the women and merchandise were protected from sea and rain under its shelter. It came alongside the *Capitana*, and its crew of twenty-five men submitted to the Admiral. They had evidently come from a long distance, and the merchandise included many things of great interest. There were wooden swords armed with fish bones, copper axes, and cotton cloths. The Spaniards here saw for the first time the nuts of the cocoa plant, and fermented liquor made from maize. The character of the manufactures indicated that the merchandise came from a country which had reached a higher state of civilisation than any that had yet been discovered. If Columbus had shaped a course westward, in the direction whence the canoe had come, he would have discovered Mexico. But he was bent on the examination of the coast in the opposite direction, in search of the supposed strait.

From the island Columbus shaped a southerly course to the mainland, and struck it where there was a cape covered with shady fruit trees, close to the modern town of Truxillo in Honduras. The natives called the fruit *caxinas*, so the Admiral gave that name to the cape. Communications were opened with friendly natives on the coast, and the expedition was well supplied with fresh provisions; but from the beginning of August to the middle of September, a period of six weeks, the explorers

Pg-256

were exposed to the most terrible navigation that any of them had previously experienced. There was an incessant downpour of rain, a succession of storms of thunder and lightning raising a terrific sea, and the wind always foul. Often they did not make good fifteen miles, and sometimes not a league in the twenty-four hours. It was not until the 12th of September that the vessels succeeded in rounding Cape Gracias a Dios, and were able to steer south along what is now known as the Mosquito coast.

HORRIFIC WEATHER

Columbus had often experienced bad weather, but never of so long a duration or so fearful. The vessels had their sails blown out of the bolt ropes, anchors and boats were lost, and ropes carried away. The Admiral was very ill, but he had a small cabin rigged on deck, whence he could pilot the ship. His greatest anxiety was for the safety of young Fernando, and for the effects of such incessant toil on so young a boy; but it was a consolation to see the lad encouraging the others, and working as if he had been years at sea. His brother was another source of anxiety. "He was in the ship that was in the worst condition and the most exposed to danger," he wrote, "and my grief on this account was the greater that I brought him with me against his will. Another anxiety wrung my very heart-strings, which was the thought of my son Diego whom I had left an orphan in Spain, and stripped of the honour and property that were due to him on my account."

When at length they rounded Cape Gracias a Dios there was a leading wind, and on the 15th of September the Admiral sent boats to a river, which seemed to have a deep entrance, to take in water. But one boat was capsized on the bar, the boatswain of the *Vizcaina*, named Martin de Fuentarabia, and a Basque boy named Larrea

Pg 257

being drowned The place was called "Rio del Desastre." On the 25th they anchored between the beautiful island of Quirivui, which Columbus named "La Huerta," or the garden, and the mainland, called Cariay Here the Admiral rested his people until the 5th of October, held a survey on all the provisions, condemned what appeared to be injured, and collected information He enforced kindly treatment to the Indians, and won their friendship and confidence. Sailing southwards, and passing the sites of Blewfields and Greytown, he reached a place called Caribui to the south of the Nicaragua river, where he met with people wearing gold ornaments They spoke of a country called Veragua, whence the gold came; and the Admiral, with his mind full of the eastern Indies, understood that this gold district was not far from the river Ganges On 17th of October the little squadron sailed from Caribui in search of Veragua. Touching at the mouth of a river called Cubiga, the natives confirmed the reports about the riches of Veragua, but as the wind was fair for completing the exploration of the coast in his search for a strait, the Admiral deferred the investigation of these reports until a later opportunity The acquisition of gold took a very secondary place in the mind of this great man whose unselfish thoughts were ever bent on the achievement of discoveries for the welfare of the human race His character was noble and generous, and this appears over and over again, when he had to make choice between his own interests and his duty. He continued to examine the coast eastward until he reached the harbour of Puerto Bello, but after leaving that anchorage the wind headed him, and he was obliged to take shelter in a bay named by him "Puerto de Bastimentos,' because the extensive culti-

vation of maize indicated the existence of abundant supplies of food It was the "Nombre de Dios" of Nicuesa, so that the whole north coast of the Isthmus of Panama had been examined, and the question of a strait was settled. The Admiral had now connected his work with that of Bastidas The coast of the continent was explored from Cape San Agustin in Brazil to the Bay of Honduras, and there was no strait.

Unable to proceed further towards Darien, and being in great danger, Columbus took refuge in a very small bay to the east of Nombre de Dios, which he named "Retrete" Here he refitted and collected fresh provisions, resolving to return westward to the Veragua province, and investigate its capabilities as a gold-producing district. He sailed from Retrete on the 5th of December, when a time of great suffering commenced The provisions brought out from Spain were all consumed except the biscuit, which was so full of maggots that the people could only eat it in the dark when they were not visible Clothes were nearly worn out, and the men were in a very unhealthy condition, owing to the want of good food and incessant rains The ships were bored through and through by the *Teredo navalis* and were scarcely seaworthy After leaving Retrete they encountered terrible weather, and Columbus was at the point of death. "Never," he wrote, "was the sea seen so high, so terrific, and so covered with foam Not only did the wind oppose our proceeding onward, but it also rendered it highly dangerous to run for any headland, and kept me in that sea, which seemed to me as a seething caldron on a mighty fire Never did the sky look more fearful, emitting flashes in such fashion that each time I looked to see if my masts and sails were not destroyed These flashes

Pg 259

came with such alarming fury that we all thought the ship must have been consumed. All this time the waters from heaven never ceased, not to say that it rained, for it was like a repetition of the deluge." It is wonderful that the crazy little vessels could have lived through such weather. Another danger was added to all the rest. A column of water, as big round as a wine cask, rose from the surface of the sea, joined with the clouds, and came whirling down upon them, so that escape seemed impossible.* The terrified seamen began to repeat passages from the gospel of St John, and the waterspout swept clear of them, leaving them in the belief that they had been saved by divine favour. Then followed a day or two of calm, when the voracious sharks were so numerous round the ships that it was feared as an evil omen Nevertheless a good many were caught and eaten. The coast on which they had encountered so many storms and contrary winds was named "La Costa de los Contrastes." On the 4th of January 1503 a ship's boy, named Diego Portugalete, succumbed to the hardships of the voyage and there was no help for it but to throw his body to the sharks.

At length the Admiral led his battered squadron across the bar of a river which was called Yebra by the natives It was named Belem, because they entered it on Epiphany Sunday, 1503 The river of Veragua was about a league to the westward, but the bar was too shallow for even the smallest vessels to cross it. These rivers are on the north coast of the isthmus, in the province of Veragua, between the Gulf of Chiriqui and the river Chagres They got into this shelter not a day too soon. On the 24th of January a furious gale raged outside. There

* Las Casas, iii. 12

Pg 260

was also a fresh in the river and heavy breakers on the bar The vessels were driven from their anchors, came into collision, and the *Capitana* lost her foremast But when the storm had expended its violence and the flood subsided, the river Belem, protected from the sea outside by the shallow bar was like a calm lake The Adelantado was sent to communicate with the natives at a large village on the Veragua river, and entered into friendly

Costa del Oro
VERAGUA
Chiru
Nata
Escoria
Coiba
Panama
Chorrera
Dabaybe
Las Barbas
Las Orcs
Isla Rica
Ids. las Perlas
Gde. S. Miguel
S. Maria
Veragua
Belem
Quiburi
Catiba
Cubiga
Cubiga
Cubiga

Pg 261

Columbus in the islands. Bancroft, gleaning from various authorities, describes them as active and jealous of their independence always being ready to resist attempts to penetrate into their country, which consists of deep ravines, malarious swamps, abrupt heights, rapid streams, and luxuriant vegetation In the hills of Veragua and Chiriqui dwelt tribes who received the name of "Los Valientes," from their heroic resistance to the Spaniards. The Indians of the isthmus are generally well built, muscular, and of average height. Unlike most other American races, the Isthmian has a short, rather flat nose, dark eyes, excellent teeth abundant coarse hair, and skin of a medium bronze tint They were naked, except for a cotton cloth round the loins, the chiefs wearing long mantles. All the Isthmian tribes were fond of ornaments, and wore necklaces and ear-rings of gold and silver On going to war their bodies were painted. Their arms were beautifully made bows and arrows pointed with fish bone, spears and flint-edged clubs They cultivated bananas, maize, and pimento, but lived chiefly by fishing and hunting. Their huts were neatly constructed, and many were built in the branches of trees, and approached by bamboo ladders Columbus found some of the tree-top villages on the coast of Veragua raised to a height to be clear of insects and reptiles, and of the miasma rising from the swamps

It was with these Isthmians that the Admiral now had to do. On the 6th of February 1503 he sent the Adelantado, with sixty-eight men in boats, to explore the Veragua River The chief, Quibian, received him with courtesy, but was evidently jealous of the invasion Having offered to supply guides to show the Adelantado the way to the gold mines, that officer left a guard with

Pg-262

the boats, and set out up the banks of the river with the rest of his men. The explorers were taken through a dense forest, where the ground seemed impregnated with gold. Ascending a high hill, they were told that the country yielded gold as far as they could see; but when the Adelantado returned, he ascertained that the guides had taken him to the territory of a neighbouring chief, with whom Quibian was at war. On the 16th Bartolomè Columbus set out on another expedition along the coast, where he found proofs that there was abundance of the precious metal, and much gold was collected and brought back.

The Admiral was now convinced of the great value of the province he had discovered. After much consultation it was decided that a settlement should be established at the mouth of the Belem, under the command of the Adelantado, and that the Admiral himself should return to Spain for supplies and reinforcements. He hoped that Veragua would escape the fate of Española and Paria, and that, learning from experience, a crowd of hungry and cruel adventurers would not be allowed to swarm into the new colony. Columbus believed that he had reached the Aureus Chersonesus, whence, as he had read in Josephus, the gold was obtained for Solomon's temple. As regards latitude he was quite right.

A small eminence was selected for the site of the settlement, near the mouth of the river Belem, on the right bank. All the men that could be spared from the ships were sent on shore, and they began to build wooden houses and magazines thatched with palm leaves, each defended by a stockade. The garrison was to consist of eighty men, and one of the vessels was to be left with

Pg- 263

them, as well as all the provisions and arms that could possibly be spared The work proceeded rapidly, and at first everything seemed favourable for carrying out the arrangement that was contemplated

The natives, and especially Quibian, viewed these preparations with jealousy, and when they saw that it was intended to make a permanent settlement, this feeling grew into one of active hostility An extensive conspiracy was formed, and a scheme was prepared for exterminating the intruders The Admiral had been ready to depart for some time, but the bar was too shallow, and it was necessary to wait for the rains Meanwhile Quibian was busily assembling his fighting men

Suspicion of native hostility was first aroused in the mind of Diego Mendez, a valorous and loyal gentleman, and a most faithful and beloved friend of the Admiral, for whom he had been acting as secretary With cool audacity, he determined to visit the village of Quibian and make a thorough reconnaissance. On the way he passed a great number of armed men, and heard that they were collected to burn the ships and kill all the Spaniards. He resolved, however, with a single companion named Rodrigo de Escobar, a boy on board the *Vizcaina*, to go on to the village He found thousands of Indians drawn up in fighting array; but he boldly pushed his way up a hill to the chief's house, and, although he could not obtain an interview with the great man, he saw and indeed was assaulted by one of his sons, whom he appeased by presenting him with a comb and looking-glass, and by making Escobar comb his hair Returning to the Admiral, Diego Mendez reported the threatening aspect of affairs, and advised that a sudden attack on the village should be made, to secure the persons of

Pg-264

Quibian and his family. Without their chief he thought the warriors would disperse.

The Adelantado urged that the advice of Mendez should be taken. He ascended the river Veragua in boats, with seventy-four armed men, landed at the village, and went up to the chief's house with Mendez and five sailors. Quibian came out, and, after a violent struggle, was overpowered by the Adelantado, bound hand and foot, and sent down to the boat, while the main body of the Spaniards came up, and captured every soul in the house. The Adelantado then returned. But Quibian was intrusted to the custody of Juan Sanchez, pilot of the *Capitana*, who did his duty so carelessly that the native chief managed to slip overboard, dive, and reach the shore in safety. He returned to the village, to find his house desolate and his family carried off by the invaders. Henceforward nothing but the most relentless hostility could be expected from him.

At this time the rains set in, the depth of the water on the bar increased, and three caravels succeeded in crossing it, though not without scraping the sand more than once. They had been lying in the river for nearly three months. The Admiral then took an affectionate leave of his brother, promising to return with all possible speed, and giving his final instructions.

The Adelantado had scarcely returned to the settlement, when it was furiously attacked by a large force of natives led by Quibian. The valiant Genoese seized a lance, placed himself at the head of his men, and fought stubbornly in the post of greatest danger. Mendez also organised resistance and was in the thick of the fight. The Indians were at length driven back into the forest, and concealed themselves in the dense underwood, with-

Pg. 265

out losing sight of the houses of the settlement. Fortunately the Admiral had been unable to sail, owing to contrary winds; and wishing to fill up with wood and water, and also to communicate once more with his brother, he sent in a boat under the command of Diego Tristan, the captain of the *Capitana*. Tristan crossed the bar and proceeded up the river, intending to fill up with water before communicating with the Adelantado Suddenly the boat was surrounded by war canoes, coming from both banks of the river, and their occupants poured volleys of arrows into the crew. Tristan fought bravely against hopeless odds, and fell covered with wounds Only one man escaped, a cooper of Seville, named Juan de Noya. He jumped overboard, swam to the bank, and, concealing himself among the trees, found his way to the settlement. The garrison was utterly disheartened, and, in spite of the inspiriting speeches of the Adelantado and Mendez, the men clamoured to be allowed to return on board. But it was very doubtful whether this was now possible. The houses were abandoned because they were so near the forest, under cover of which the enemy could approach, and a bulwark was formed on the sea-shore of a boat, casks, and planks, behind which they resolved to defend themselves to the bitter end.

Two days passed away and the boat did not return The Admiral became very anxious Most of the Indian prisoners had broken out of the hold and jumped overboard, while those that could not effect their escape committed suicide. A few more days passed and yet no tidings. The saddest forebodings filled the mind of Columbus. It was then that he heard the voice a second time. On this occasion it was evidently in a dream, and not in his waking moments. But the impression was so

vivid that he was able to write the words he heard in his journal. It was a compassionate voice, and it said, "O fool, and slow to believe and to serve thy God, the God of all! From thine infancy He has kept thee under His constant and watchful care. He gave thee the keys of those barriers of the ocean sea which were closed with such mighty chains, and thou wast obeyed through many lands, and gained an honourable fame throughout Christendom. Turn to Him and acknowledge thine error—His mercy is infinite. Thine old age shall not prevent thee from accomplishing any great undertaking. Thou criest out for uncertain help. Answer, who has afflicted thee so much or so often—God or the world? The privileges promised by God He never fails in bestowing; nor does He declare, after a service has been rendered Him, that such was not agreeable with His intention, or that He had regarded the matter in another light: nor does He inflict suffering in order to make a show of His power. His acts answer to His words, and He performs all His promises with interest. I have told thee what the Creator has done for thee, and what He does for all men. Even now He partially shows thee the reward of so many toils and dangers incurred by thee in the service of others." The voice paused, while Columbus remained in a trance, and its last words were, 'Fear not, but trust! All these tribulations are, with good cause, recorded on marble!" He had every reason for despondency. In sinking ships, without provisions or boats, he had to cross several thousand miles of ocean, or die on the passage with his son, and all his people. But after he heard the voice he took comfort.

There was only one boat left, and the Admiral hesitated to risk its loss. At this critical juncture a young

Pg- 267

sailor of Seville, named Pedro de Ledesma, came forward and volunteered, if the boat would take him near the surf, to swim to the settlement or perish in the attempt. Columbus accepted the gallant offer, and Ledesma succeeded in swimming to shore, and in returning with the melancholy tidings of the destruction of Tristan and all his crew, and of the despair of the garrison It was a sad but inevitable necessity that for the present the plan of founding a colony in Veragua must be abandoned. After eight days, by using the single boat and two canoes fastened together, all the stores were brought back, and the garrison was embarked The squadron, now reduced to three caravels, left the Belem, and arrived at Puerto Bello on the 20th of April 1503 Here it was necessary to abandon the *Vizcaina* as quite unseaworthy Only two leaky little vessels remained to take them home, the *Capitana* and *Santiago de Palos* The Admiral appointed the valiant Diego Mendez to succeed poor Tristan in command of the *Capitana*.

Columbus and his brother knew it to be necessary that they should work as far as possible to the eastward before leaving the land, otherwise they would be carried far to leeward by the current, in stretching across to Española. The pilots wanted to shape a course direct to San Domingo, and much discontent was bred among the crew at the supposed delay. The Admiral was unmoved He passed Retrete and a cluster of islands he called "Las Barbas," now known as Las Muletas, and he did not leave the coast until he was in sight of Cape Tiburon Even then he did so too soon, and the vessels were carried away far to leeward of their intended port.

The voyage of discovery was over. Great work had

Pg- 268

been done. The important question of the strait was solved. Columbus or his pupils had examined the shores of the continent from 8 S to 16 N., and the strait must now be sought for beyond those limits. A great extent of the new coast line had been discovered and explored, including the rich gold-yielding province of Veragua. The service had been performed in unseaworthy little vessels, in the most fearful weather and in the face of appalling hardships. Two men had been drowned in crossing the bar of a river, a captain and fourteen men had been massacred by Indians, and six had died of disease. The rest were worn out by exposure and want of food. But their troubles were not yet over, and they had many more hardships and sufferings to endure before their service was completed.

Pg 269

CHAPTER XIV.

ABANDONED AT JAMAICA

5|1|1503

On Monday, the 1st of May 1503, Columbus lost sight of that great continent which he had discovered, but which he was never destined to see again. When we consider the pain he was suffering and his growing infirmities, and the fearful weather he encountered; when we realise the difficulties and dangers of the voyage in every shape and form, and the consummate skill with which he met them; when we contemplate his watchfulness, and his ability as a pilot and a seaman, we must come to the conclusion that his last voyage of discovery was the most admirable achievement though not the most important in the life of this wonderful man. If it was second to the first voyage, it was only second

The Admiral had left the coast at Cape Tiburon against his own judgment, and as a concession to the incessant murmuring of the pilots and crew. The consequence was that, passing the Tortugas or Caymans, he only fetched the Jardin de la Reyna, nearly at the western end of Cuba. He would have to beat up, against wind and current, to Española, in vessels with hulls literally honeycombed by the *Teredo*. Suffering from hunger and exhausted by fatigue they at length reached Cape Cruz, where a supply of cassava bread was obtained. But by no possibility could the sinking hulls beat up to

CAPE CRUZ

*Columbus ran the sinking vessels on a sandy beach

windward and reach Española. In despair the Admiral shaped a course for Jamaica, reached "Puerto Bueno, now called Dry Harbour, on the 23rd of June, and "Puerto San Gloria," the modern Don Christopher's Cove, on the next day. The weather was fine, and the Admiral ran the sinking vessels, side by side, on the sandy beach. The work of pumping and baling ceased, and they were soon full of water. They were securely made fast together, and huts were built on the decks to house the crew. The cabins under the poops and forecastles could still be used.

The shipwrecked explorers were now dependent on supplies from the shore for their existence. Some friendly natives came, in the first days, with provisions to barter for any trifles the Spaniards would give them. They belonged to a small village called Maima, at a short distance from the ships. Diego Mendez was a supremely capable man, as well as a knight-errant, and a loyal gentleman. He undertook to organise a system of provision supply, by means of conventions with the principal chiefs throughout the island. He travelled to the eastern cape, and formed a close friendship with a powerful chief, who sold him a good canoe, and undertook to send cassava bread, fish, and game to the ships. Similar conventions were made with minor chiefs all along the coast. From that time the natives came every day with abundant supplies, and the Admiral made strict rules to prevent their being imposed upon or ill-treated. But they were content with any trifling little ornament in exchange for their provisions. Young Fernando was now fifteen years of age, and he took great interest in the arrangements of the market. The Admiral purchased ten canoes at Maima for the use of his people.

The great necessity, as well as the great difficulty, was to devise the means of informing the government at Española of their predicament. The Admiral turned the matter over in his mind for a long time, and at last he sent for Diego Mendez. "My son," he said, "not one of those whom I have here with me has any idea of the great danger in which we stand except myself and you; for we are but few in number, and the natives are numerous, and very fickle and capricious. They can easily destroy us all whensoever they take it into their heads to do so. I have thought of a remedy. It is that some one should go to Española in the canoe that you have purchased, buy a vessel and enable us to escape from our dangerous position. Tell me your opinion?" Mendez replied that he saw the danger distinctly, but he doubted whether any one would be found to cross a stormy sea, 120 miles in width, in a frail canoe. The Admiral, admitting the risk and peril, denied the impossibility, and told Mendez that he intrusted the service to him. Then the gallant sailor said that if these important services were always given to him there might be a feeling of jealousy among the others. He therefore requested that the business might be placed before the whole of the people, to see if any one would volunteer. "If all refuse," added Mendez, "I will risk my life in your service, as I have done many times already."

The Admiral submitted the matter to the people, and called for volunteers. They were all silent. Then Mendez spoke out. "I have but one life, and I am willing to sacrifice it in the service of your lordship, and for the welfare of all those who are here with you." The Admiral embraced him, and he at once prepared for the voyage. Drawing his canoe on shore he fixed a false

keel on it, nailed some weather-boards round the gunwale, and gave it a coat of tar. He also fitted it with a mast and sail, and laid in provisions for two Spaniards and six Indians. Everything being ready he bade farewell to the Admiral and all his shipmates, and made sail for the eastern point of the island, a distance of seventy-five miles. Here he was attacked by some hostile natives, who made him a prisoner and were going to kill him. Escaping to his canoe, he shoved off and made sail, returning to the ships. It was then arranged that the Adelantado, with seventy men, should march to the east point, and remain as guards until Méndez put to sea. After waiting for a few days, the sea appeared to be calm. Diego Mendez was accompanied this time by Bartolomè Fieschi, the Genoese, another loyal and devoted friend of the Admiral. Mendez was instructed to proceed at once to Spain and give an account of the voyage to the sovereigns, while Fieschi was to return from Española and report the safe arrival of Mendez.

The Admiral wrote a most touching letter to the sovereigns, dated the 7th of July 1503, which is full of graphic descriptions and noble thoughts. After alluding in temperate language to the disgraceful conduct of Ovando at San Domingo and to the hurricane, he describes the terrific weather off the Honduras coast and his own serious illness, mentioning his anguish at the condition of his brother and his little son Fernando; and he refers to his own poverty after so many years of service, not as a personal complaint, but to show the destitute state in which his beloved son Diego would be left in the event of his death. He then reports the tidings he obtained respecting Veragua and its gold, his examination of the land, the terrible sufferings in the bad

weather off the Veragua coast, and the anchorage at Belem. The letter describes the exploring work, the discovery of gold, the attempt to form a settlement, and the war with Quibian, ending with a reference to his despondency and despair at the loss of his boat's crew and the break up of the settlement. The solemn words he heard in his dream, which renewed his hopes, are then repeated to the sovereigns, followed by a narrative of events down to the shipwreck at Jamaica. Some account is given of the people and products of the newly discovered country, and especially of the gold mines of Veragua, with the grounds he has for identifying Veragua with the Golden Chersonese. The Admiral concludes his letter with an earnest appeal for his men. "The people who have sailed with me have passed through incredible toil and danger, and I beseech your highnesses, since they are poor, to pay them promptly and to be gracious to them." Finally, he refers with grief to the condition of Española and Paria, overrun with greedy adventurers, to his own wrongs, and in making a final appeal for justice he prays for the prosperity of the sovereigns. This most interesting letter was accompanied by one to Father Gaspar Gorricio, with messages to young Diego and another to Ovando, requesting him to send vessels to convey the people to San Domingo.

With these letters Mendez embarked in one canoe while Fieschi accompanied him in another, each having five Indians, who went with them voluntarily at the risk of their own lives. They bade farewell to the good Adelantado one bright night, and the Indians impelled the canoes over the smooth sea with their paddles during the whole of the next day, occasionally jumping overboard to cool themselves by swimming. On the second

night the Indians were exhausted with fatigue and thirst, so Mendez and Fieschi hoisted their sails. On the second day there was no land in sight. The Spaniards took their spells at the paddles, but all began to suffer terribly from thirst.

"Water, water, everywhere
Nor any drop to drink"

The calabashes were now all empty. The sun poured down its scorching heat, and by noon the Indians had lost all power to work. Mendez and Fieschi kept giving the poor fellows short drinks from their breakers from time to time, and so kept them up until the cool of the evening, when they revived a little. They were making for a small island called Navasa, about twenty-four miles from the west point of Española, and they began to fear they had been taking a wrong course. They were almost in despair when night overtook them, and they were still out of sight of land. As the moon rose, Mendez noticed that he could only see half, when the whole disc ought to be visible. It was rising behind the islet, and this blessed sign was their salvation. The Indians were all given drinks and shown the land. They exerted their final strength, and soon the canoes reached the shore. It was a mass of barren rocks, but some rain water was found in the clefts, and they all obtained welcome rest. One Indian had died that afternoon. Cape Tiburon, the western point of Española, which the Admiral had named San Miguel, was in sight, and at sunset they resumed the voyage, reaching land at dawn. Fieschi wished to return to Jamaica, in obedience to the Admiral's instructions, but the natives could not be induced to undertake another such voyage. After resting for two days Diego

Mendez proceeded to Xaragua, where he found the Comendador Ovando, and reported what had happened, and the critical position of the Admiral and his people.

Ovando deliberately put off the despatch of any help. He was ever in dread that the Admiral's rights might be restored He hoped that, if he left him to starve at Jamaica, he would die, and that all danger from that quarter would be removed Mendez found him at Xaragua engaged in work so diabolical that it requires the unanimous testimony of all contemporary writers to make it credible. The chief Behechio had died, and his sister Anacaona had succeeded him. Ovando announced his intention of paying her a visit, and she summoned all the under chiefs of Xaragua to assemble at her residence, to do honour to the comendador. That officer's plot had been arranged beforehand. In the midst of festivities in his honour, he caused the caciques to be seized and fastened to wooden pillars within the house, which was then set on fire. They were all burnt alive. An indiscriminate massacre was then committed, neither age nor sex being spared Finally he ordered Anacaona to be hanged—the good and bountiful princess, who had ever been a firm friend of the Spaniards, and with whom the Adelantado had had such pleasant relations. Ovando then carried desolation into Higuey, the eastern province of Española, and hanged its noble and gallant chief, Cotabanama. He was rapidly exterminating the native population. His friend Las Casas admits that he was unfit to bear rule over natives, but maintains that he was a good governor of his own countrymen. Yet he deliberately left 130 Spaniards to starve at Jamaica, in the expectation that his own private interests might thereby be advanced.

P 9 27

The months passed on, and no tidings came to Puerto la Gloria of Diego Mendez. Sickness began to appear among the people, who were crowded in the huts on the ships' decks, although excellent arrangements were made by the Admiral for their general comfort, and for exercise on shore. Want of employment, and the long-deferred hope of relief, were telling upon them, and many were becoming discontented and demoralised. The two brothers to whom Columbus had been induced to give appointments for which they were quite unfit, by the treasurer Morales, began to stir up a mutiny. Francisco de Porras was captain of the *Santiago*, and Diego was accountant. They were joined by Juan Sanchez, the pilot who allowed Quibian to slip through his fingers; by Pedro de Ledesma, the intrepid swimmer; by Juan Barba, the gunner of the *Capitana*, and about fifty others. Their intention was to seize the Admiral's canoes and follow Mendez to Española.

Mutiny

On the 2nd of January 1504 Porras and his followers broke out in open mutiny. Porras entered the cabin where the Admiral was laid up with a severe attack of gout, made violent complaints, and accused him of never intending to return to Spain. Columbus reasoned with him, but he refused to listen, and rushed out of the cabin, calling upon the mutineers to rally round him. The Admiral limped out but was induced to return, and the Adelantado confronted them with a drawn sword, ready to defend the approach to his brother's cabin with his life. The loyal men, of course, included all the sick, and they were too weak to resist the followers of Porras, who seized what stores they chose to take, and the ten canoes, and departed in the direction of the east point. They made several attempts to put to sea, but always returned.

There was no Diego Mendez among them. At last they gave up all hope of crossing to Española, and wandered over the island, robbing and ill-treating the natives

The Admiral and his brother consoled the loyal men who stood by them in their need, gave them hopes of speedy relief, and attended to the comforts of the sick But the misconduct of the mutineers began to tell against the Admiral's adherents, for the natives did not distinguish between the two parties, and the cessation of supplies began to threaten actual starvation. Something was necessary to avert a famine, and the Admiral's readiness of resource saved his people. He hit upon a stratagem which served its purpose admirably. They had entered upon the month of February, and the Admiral knew, from the ephemeris of Regiomontanus, that there would be a total eclipse of the moon at a certain hour Young Fernando tells us that his father sent for the principal caciques of the district, and told them, through a native who had acquired sufficient knowledge of Spanish, that he and his people were servants of the God of Heaven, who would reward the good and punish the evil God was angry with the people of the island for failing to bring provisions according to their agreements, and he would punish them with great evils unless they fulfilled their promises As they might not believe his words, God would show them a sign that very night, by making the moon dark before them When the eclipse commenced the Indians were terrified, and came to the ships with great lamentations and laden with provisions, entreating the Admiral to pray to his God that His anger might be averted from them Columbus waited until the eclipse began to wane, and then told them that they were forgiven, and that the sign of God's anger

would disappear They went away full of awe and wonder, and from that time the supplies came in with great regularity

The month of March arrived, and it was eight months since the departure of Mendez and Fieschi. Fears began to be entertained that they had perished in the passage. Even some of those who had hitherto remained loyal began to entertain mutinous thoughts, which the Catalonian apothecary named Bernal, and two seamen, his accomplices, named Alonzo de Zamora and Pedro de Villatoro, strove to fan into a flame At this juncture, late one afternoon towards the end of April, a caravel hove in sight All despondency disappeared, and the people were filled with joyful hope. But she hove to outside the port. Then a boat was seen to be pulling in, and when she came near enough a man named Diego de Escobar was made out in the stern sheets. He came alongside, handed up a letter from Ovando, and a present of one bottle of wine and a piece of bacon and then shoved off, the boat's crew laying on their oars

Escobar was a main supporter of Roldan, and one of the most infamous miscreants in Española He had been selected for this mission as one of the Admiral's most bitter enemies. His orders from Ovando were merely to leave the letter and receive an answer, but to allow no further communication, and to take no one back with him. In his letter Ovando condoled with the Admiral on his sufferings, and regretted that no vessels could be spared to convey him and his people to San Domingo Escobar was evidently sent as a spy, in the hope that he would find the Admiral dead or in extreme distress, and to report on the condition of affairs The Admiral at least got the news that his faithful friends arrived safely

at Española, so he knew for certain that sooner or later they would arrange for his relief Columbus wrote a dignified answer to Ovando, calling upon him for assistance, and Escobar's caravel departed again that very night

The disappointment was very bitter, but the Admiral consoled his people with the reflection that they were now certain of the safety of Mendez, and that succour was only delayed He also sent a message to the mutineers with the same assurances, and an appeal to them to return to their duty But Porras prevented his followers from seeing the missive, sent back an insolent reply, and commenced a march on Maima, with the intention of attacking the ships, and making the Admiral and his brother prisoners The Admiral was too ill to move He intrusted another mission to his brother, who, if it failed, was to reduce the mutineers to obedience by force Bartolomè Columbus was a man rather of action than of words, and he was justly indignant against Porras He collected and armed all the men who were not disabled from sickness, and advanced beyond Maima until he confronted the mutineers. Much against his will, but in obedience to his brother's instructions, he sent messengers to propose terms Porras saw that his numbers were superior to those of the Adelantado, and he reckoned upon an easy victory. He and six others swore to keep together and make straight for the Admiral's faithful brother They feared him more than all the rest put together, and his death would secure their victory Giving no answer to the messengers, Porras and his friends made a desperate rush upon the Adelantado. But he was a match for the whole of them.

The doughty Genoese, with feet firmly planted, dealt

blows right and left Sanchez the pilot fell dead at his feet Next fell Barba the gunner. Pedro de Ledesma dropped under the third blow, desperately wounded Porras himself aimed a furious stroke at the Adelantado, which was caught in his shield, and went so deep into the leather that the mutineer could not free it Bartolomè quickly closed on his antagonist, threw him to the ground, and with some help bound him hand and foot The other malcontents seeing the fate of their leaders, fled in all directions. Porras was brought on board a prisoner. He ought to have been hanged, but the Admiral's humanity intervened. Even loth to proceed to extremities, he granted this ungrateful miscreant his life The defeat of the mutineers took place on the 18th of May, and on the 20th they sent an abject letter to the Admiral, praying for forgiveness, and expressing repentance for their rebellion With his invariable kindness the Admiral sent them his pardon, the brothers Porras alone remaining in custody

Nothing remained but to wait for the succour which Mendez and Fieschi were sure to send During this period of suspense, one of the Admiral's oldest and most faithful friends succumbed to the hardships of this severe service Pedro de Terreros, who had been captain of the *Gallega*, died on the 29th of May 1504 He had been steward during the first voyage, and witnessed the memorable landing at Guanahani; and he had served with his beloved commander in every subsequent expedition While one faithful old friend passed away, another was hurrying to the rescue Towards the end of June 1504 two caravels at length hove in sight Diego Mendez, after overcoming the numerous obstacles and delays caused by Ovando, succeeded in freighting a small vessel

the command of which he gave to the true and loyal Diego Salcedo Servant of the Admiral during the first voyage, it was Salcedo who told the sailor of Lepe that Columbus was the first to see the light Ever faithful to his beloved master, he had been employed for some time at San Domingo, as one of the Admiral's agents to recover the property robbed by Bobadilla. The shameful conduct of Ovando at length aroused the indignation of the colonists, and he was even attacked from the pulpit for leaving the great Admiral, the discoverer of the New World,* and his people to their fate. To save appearances, he sent a caravel to accompany the vessel commanded by Salcedo

At length the long-suffering explorers were rescued Many had never expected to leave the island In nearly all the lamp of hope had sunk very low, and their joy was proportionately great They all embarked in the two caravels on the 28th of June 1504. It took them three weeks to beat up to San Domingo against the trade-wind, and during that time Salcedo gave the Admiral full particulars of the government of Española by Ovando He heard with grief and indignation of the murder of the good and gracious Anacaona, of the cruel burning of the caciques, of the massacre of the people, and the depopulation of the island. On reaching San Domingo, the colonists crowded to the beach to greet the illustrious discoverer, saved from so many perils and dangers almost by a miracle. The force of public opinion obliged Ovando to receive him with outward courtesy and hospitality, but the real feeling of the man was shown by the infliction of many petty annoyances on his noble-minded guest.

* This appropriate name was first used by the Admiral himself in 1500

Pg-282

San Domingo was now a melancholy place for the Admiral and his brother, and they hurried the preparations for their departure. Most of their people were sadly in want of clothes and money, and the majority elected to remain in the colony. They had received no pay from the government, but their generous leader distributed money among them from his own slender stock. On the 12th of September, after a residence of a month at San Domingo, the Admiral sailed for Spain with his brother and young son Fernando. On the 19th they encountered a fearful storm, the mainmast went by the board, and the little vessel was left at the mercy of the waves. The Admiral, although suffering tortures from the gout, showed his accustomed seamanlike qualities in rigging a jurymast and getting the vessel under control again. Soon afterwards the mizenmast was carried away, and there was bad weather for many days. After fifty-six days the coast of Spain was at length sighted, and on the 7th of November 1504 the Admiral crossed the bar of the Guadalquivir and anchored at San Lucar.

9/12/1504 Columbus, his brother And his Son sailed for Spain.

* * *

Thus ended the naval career of the greatest navigator in history. His mind was still full of schemes for the settlement of Veragua, and the extension of further discovery, but the worn-out body could bear the strain no longer. He had come home to die. If a few more years of work had been permitted, the whole magnificence of his discovery would have been revealed to him. The errors of astronomers and mathematicians respecting the length of a degree were still the data on which he based his speculations. He had no others, and the dark veil they drew before his eyes could only have been removed by actual discovery. The revelation of a great South Sea would probably have torn it away. The absence of

a strait must even then have revealed to him the insularity of Cuba and the true course of the Gulf Stream But the glass was run out. He knew that he was the chosen Christopher destined to bear Christ across the ocean. He knew that he was the discoverer of a New World, as he had called it in one of his letters, and that his idea of sailing westward had borne such fruit that all civilised Europe resounded with it He knew that he had done his duty faithfully and loyally as a Christian man, and with such knowledge he was prepared to die. But while he had breath he was bound to claim his rights and privileges, not for himself, but for his dearly loved son who would inherit them. His duty was done, and done in a way that no other man could have done it. His brief span of remaining life must be devoted to his love. Full of such thoughts the old hero, old before his time, was carried out of the tempest-tossed vessel and conveyed up the river to Seville

After the Admiral's return from his last voyage, his old follower, Vicente Yanez Pinzon, agreed with another pilot, named Juan Diaz de Solis, to take up the thread of their great master's discoveries at the island off the coast of Honduras, which he had named, "Isla de los Piños," and to follow up the clue in an opposite direction.[1] According to Oviedo, they took the young mutineer, Pedro de Ledesma, with them, and they set out in the autumn of 1506,* or possibly in a subsequent year, 1507 or 1510. Sailing late in the autumn, they reached the Gulf of Honduras at about Christmas, and Pinzon therefore gave it the name of Navidad They returned after having explored a great part of the coast

* It appears from documents in the collection of Navarrete that Pinzon was in Spain during 1505 and until August 23 1506

Pg-284

CUBA PROVEN NOT TO BE AN ISLAND.

of Yucatan, and, according to Peter Martyr,* Pinzon afterwards claimed that he established the insularity of Cuba. He may have conjectured that Cuba was an island, but the credit of the actual discovery of that geographical fact is due to the voyage of Sebastian de Ocampo in 1508

NOTE.

[1] *Date of the Yucatan voyage of Pinzon and Solis*

With the object of detracting from the credit of Columbus, Oviedo tried to make out that "the pilots Vicente Yanez Pinzon, Juan Diaz de Solis, and Pedro de Ledesma, with three caravels," discovered the Honduras coast before Pinzon was off the mouth of the Amazons The alleged voyage would, therefore, have been made in 1498 His mention of Ledesma enables us to detect the misrepresentation This young native of Seville was an inexperienced ordinary seaman in his twenty-seventh year, when he sailed in the last expedition of Columbus in 1503 He was entered as a seaman on board the *Vizcaina* by her captain, Bartolomè Fleschi. If he had sailed with Pinzon six years before, he would have been a lad in his twenty-first year. It is not to be believed that he was then in a position to have his name coupled with those of Pinzon and Solis as a pilot in command of a caravel, while six years later he was only an ordinary seaman. But in 1506 or 1507, when Ledesma was thirty, Pinzon would be likely enough to take a man who had previously served with the Admiral on the coast for which he was bound, as a pilot Thus this mention of Ledesma defeats the object of Oviedo to mislead, and brings us to the truth Gomara, as was his wont when there was a chance of injuring Columbus, adopted this mis-statement of Oviedo He, however, only ventured upon an insinuation "But some say that Pinzon and Solis had been there three years before." This is certainly false, for "three years before" Pinzon was engaged on a voyage in quite a different direction

* Dec. II lib vii.

Pg - 285

These statements may be set aside as attempts to deprive Columbus of his right of priority in discovering the Honduras coast, which are shown to be false from internal evidence They are more completely disproved by a historian whose perfect fairness and means of obtaining accurate information cannot be doubted. Las Casas was a contemporary, and had an intimate knowledge of these events, and an acquaintance with the actors in them. He alone gives any details of the voyage of Pinzon and Solis to Honduras, and says that it was undertaken after the return of the Admiral from his last voyage, and with the object of following up his discoveries (Lib. II cap xxxix). He denounces the conduct of men like Oviedo and Gomara, who unjustly attempted to detract from the work of the Admiral, "as if Columbus had not been the first to open the gates of the ocean, which had been closed for so many thousands of ages, and as if it was not he who showed the light by which all might see how to discover, . . . and who put the thread into the hands of the rest, by which they found the clue to more distant parts"

Herrera copied his account of this voyage of Pinzon and Solis word for word from Las Casas, adding that it took place in 1506 If so they must have sailed late in the autumn of 1506, for Pinzon was certainly in Spain in August of that year. This is very likely, as, from his having given the name of Navidad to the Gulf of Honduras, he does not seem to have reached the coast until Christmas However that may be, it is certain, from the unimpeachable evidence of Las Casas, that this voyage of Pinzon and Solis was undertaken after, and not before, the last voyage of Columbus The evidence of Rodrigo Bastidas in the trial is equally conclusive He bore testimony that the coast discovered by Pinzon and Solis was all one with the coast which the Admiral discovered *first* Bastidas was a trustworthy honest man, as Las Casas tells us, and was personally acquainted with all the facts

Pg 286

Nov. 1504 he arrived in Seville, but was too ill...

CHAPTER XV.

DEATH OF THE ADMIRAL

The Admiral arrived at Seville in November 1504, and was very anxious to proceed to court and report himself to the sovereigns. A litter was even got ready for him by order of the municipality, but he proved to be much too ill to be moved for many months. At Seville he was attended by both his brothers, and was surrounded by many warm friends, chief among them being Fray Gaspar Gorricio, and the Fathers of Las Cuevas. The vast Carthusian monastery of Santa Maria de las Cuevas stood on the right bank of the Guadalquivir, near the north end of the suburb of Triana. Rich in architecture, in its library and pictures, it was further enriched in after years by the labours of Zurbaran. But its greatest ornaments were its delicious groves of orange and lemon trees along the banks of the river; and here no doubt the illustrious invalid passed much of his time in conversations with Gorricio, the Cura of Los Palacios, and other friends.

Diego Mendez had reached Spain before Columbus

The faithful Diego Mendez had preceded the Admiral to Spain, had presented his letter from Jamaica to the sovereigns, and was still at court with young Diego. The Admiral wrote to his son on November 21st expressing a wish that he should remain at court and superintend his affairs; and in another letter, dated the 28th, he wrote of his delight at the promised payment of his poor people

who served in the last voyage, and who had passed through such fearful dangers and hardships. His chief hope of support at court was from Dr. Deza, now Bishop of Palencia, his old and staunch friend; and he also anticipated help from the exertions of his agent Carbajal, of Diego Mendez, and of his son. Writing again on the 1st of December, the Admiral expressed great anxiety for the health of the Queen. He was sending his brother the Adelantado and his son Fernando to court, to kiss hands on their return. "Make much of your brother," he wrote to Diego; "he has a good disposition, and is now leaving his boyhood. Ten such brothers would not be too many. Never have I found better friends, on my right hand and on my left, than my brothers."

Alas! the good Queen had breathed her last in Medina del Campo six days before the date of the Admiral's letter. Her constitution had been undermined by the strain of hard and constant physical and mental work exacted by her position as reigning Queen of Castille. Before her death, she was horrified at the news of the atrocities perpetrated by Ovando, of the burning of caciques, the murder of Anacaona, and the massacres of the people in Xaragua and Higuey. One of her last requests to Ferdinand was that Ovando might be recalled, and that order might be taken for the better treatment of the natives. Ferdinand did not comply with it. Ovando suited him. He sent plenty of gold. When Ovando had nearly exterminated the natives of Española, Ferdinand authorised him to fill their places by kidnapping the unfortunate inhabitants of the Bahamas. Isabella died at noon of the 26th of November 1504. Her loss was deeply felt by the Admiral, for she had upheld him in his adversity, had adopted his great scheme, and had

Pg - 288

ever been a warm and consistent friend She had no more sincere mourner than the illustrious Genoese, whose grief was deep and genuine

The Adelantado, with young Fernando and the Admiral's agent Carbajal, left Seville on the 5th of December, to kiss the King's hand and give an account of the voyage Columbus himself was still unable to move; but he wrote frequently to Diego, and in one letter, dated January 18, 1505. he sent a playful message to his old friend the Bishop of Palencia "I must lodge with him whether he likes it or not, for we have to go back to our first brotherly love, and he will not be able to deny me" Diego Mendez had been at Seville, and started again for the court on the 3rd of February. The Admiral was happy in still having true and faithful friends in all ranks of life He deserved to have them. Amerigo Vespucci, who came to him at this time, enjoyed his good will. "He always," writes the Admiral, "showed a desire to please me, he is a very respectable man, but fortune has been adverse to him, as it has been to many others, and his labours have not been so profitable to him as he might reasonably have expected He expresses himself very desirous to serve me, and to do all he possibly can for me" The Admiral sent this letter to his son, dated February 5, 1504, by Vespucci, and desired Diego to do what he could to help him and further his wishes at court

The Admiral had obtained license to ride a mule, and as the tortures of the gout, aggravated by the cold and damp of a very severe winter, were less unbearable when warm weather set in, the journey was commenced in the middle of May 1505 Ferdinand was at Segovia, and thither the Admiral journeyed by short stages, accom-

Pg 289

panied and fondly cared for by his brother Bartolomè. The King received him with feigned delight, and listened to his account of the events of his last voyage, probably with real interest. But nothing came of the interview, and after a time the Admiral submitted a memorial for the restitution of his rights. The King's reply was that a matter of so much gravity and importance should first be considered by some councillor of experience and probity. Columbus concurred, and suggested that no one could be better fitted for such a task than Dr Deza, who had just been translated from Palencia to be Archbishop of Seville. That true friend said that he was willing to arbitrate respecting the amounts due to the Admiral, but not on the question of his rights, for concerning them there could not be any doubt.

Archbisho
to
ARBITRA
QUESTIO
OF MONE
DUE
Columbus

The Admiral remained with the court at Segovia from May to the end of October, and he then followed it to Salamanca, waiting for a definite reply to his memorial. Here the severe cold of the early winter brought on fresh attacks of illness, and he determined to go to Valladolid, leaving the care of his business in the hands of his two sons, under the friendly protection of Cardinal Ximenes de Cisneros. The court was shortly expected at Valladolid also, and in anticipation of the King's arrival the Admiral addressed a letter to him, praying that his son Diego might be allowed to take his place, as the recipient of royal justice. He asked for no favour, only for bare justice. He also pleaded for the unhappy natives of Española. "They were, and are," he wrote, "the wealth of that country. It is they who dig and produce bread and other food for the Christians. It is they who extract gold from the mines, and perform all other services not only of men but also of beasts of burden."

PLEADED
FOR
NATIVES
OF
ESPANOL

Soon afterwards the court arrived at Valladolid, but Ferdinand went on to Laredo, to meet his daughter Juana, the new Queen of Castille, who was expected with her husband, the handsome young Philip I of Austria. Leaving the port of Weymouth, after a visit to Henry VII. at Windsor, they arrived, not at Laredo but at Coruña, on the 28th of April 1506. The news revived all the hopes of the Admiral, and he received it with delight. He trusted in the justice of Isabella's daughter and her gallant young husband. His illness kept him confined to his bed in a hired lodging at Valladolid, but he sent his brother the Adelantado to present himself to the new sovereigns in the name of the Admiral, and to deliver to them a letter of congratulation. Las Casas considered it as certain that if the Admiral and Philip had both lived, full justice would have been done at last.

Would never again see Bartolomè

Bartolomè bade farewell to his brother, whom he was never destined to see again. There remained with the Admiral his two sons, the ever faithful companions of his last voyage, Mendez and Fieschi, and several servants and mariners, humble but loyal friends, who had continued true to their old commander, and remained by him to the end. That end was now near at hand. The Admiral had written a codicil to his will at Segovia on the 25th of August 1505. Feeling that he had but a short time to live, he sent for the notary and several witnesses, who assembled in his room on the 19th of May 1506. He was unable to move, but his mind was as clear as ever when he formally ratified his last will, and the Segovia codicil (1). He then became tranquil, and he was quite at rest with regard to his temporal affairs. His mind indeed was buoyant and full of hope from the result of his brother's mission. He devoted his last day

updated his "WILL" 8/25/1505

Pg 291

on earth to thoughts of eternity. At his own request he was attired in a Franciscan habit, an order to which he had been warmly attached since he formed the old friendships at the convent of La Rabida. A Franciscan named Gaspar acted as his confessor, and administered to him the sacraments of the Church. Surrounded by his

HOUSE AT VALLADOLID IN WHICH COLUMBUS DIED

with sons + friend

↓

Columbus died on the eve of the Ascension 5/20/15

weeping sons, and by many faithful and attached friends, the great man expired peacefully on the eve of Ascension Day, the 20th of May 1506. His last words were, "In manas tuas Domine commendo spiritum meum."

The brightest light of that age was put out. The beacon round which had centred its great aspirations, its

Pg. 292

enterprise and its science, was dimmed for a time, but only to burn still brighter in the ages to come, as a glorious example for all future generations. Four centuries, far from having dimmed the memory of the great discoverer's achievement, have impressed it more deeply on the minds of men

After the funeral ceremonies at Valladolid, the Admiral's body, in accordance with his own wish, was translated to Seville, and deposited in the convent of Santa Maria de las Cuevas, where he had found such true friends, and which he had loved so well We may assume that the coffin was attended by the Admiral's brothers and sons, in the long journey from Valladolid The remains of Columbus remained in the chapel called Santa Ana, in the Carthusian convent at Seville, from 1506 to 1544 In the latter year the widow of Diego took the bodies of the Admiral and his eldest son in her own ship to San Domingo, and, by permission of Charles V., interred them in the chancel of the cathedral church in that city There they remained in peace for 250 years But when Española was ceded to France by the treaty of Basle, in 1795, the Spanish Admiral, Don Gabriel de Aristizabal, resolved that the venerated ashes should not remain in a foreign land. They were disinterred, put on board the Spanish line-of-battle ship *San Lorenzo*, and conveyed to Havana, arriving in the harbour on January 25, 1796. The precious remains were placed in a niche on the right hand side of the high altar of Havana cathedral (3)

His remains were moved

No monument was erected in the chapel at Las Cuevas, consequently King Ferdinand never caused the lines to be engraved on it—

"A Castilla y a Leon
Nuevo Mundo dió Colon"

It was indeed a most unlikely thing for that unsympathetic matter-of-fact personage to do. The lines were used as a motto encircling the arms of the Admiral's heirs, and may be seen on the tombstone of his son Fernando, in Seville Cathedral.

There is only one authentic portrait of Columbus. It was painted when the great discoverer was advanced in years, and was in the villa at Como of the Italian historian Paulus Jovius, who made a collection of portraits of the worthies of his time. This picture is still at Como, the property of the Nobile Alessandro de Orchi, whose grandmother was a Giovio; and it has never left the family. It is the head of a venerable man with thin grey hair; the forehead high, the eyes pensive and rather melancholy. The face is oblong, without beard of any kind, and there is a small swelling on the left side of the nose, which is one indication of the picture having been painted from life. Over the head are the words "Colombus Lygur, novi orbis reptor." Only half the bust is shown, the dress being a gown laced at the throat. In an edition of a book called "Elogia Virorum Illustrium," published in 1575, there are woodcuts of the portraits in the villa of Jovius, including one of Columbus, but it is quite different from the original. The engraving in the "Elogia" is half-length, representing an elderly man with hair inclined to curl, and a thoughtful, melancholy, but rather pleasing expression. The dress is a cape and hood fallen back, of some religious order, one hand drawing in the folds of the cape, and resting on the other. A copy was made of the picture of Jovius in about 1550, which is now in the Uffizi gallery at Florence; but the artist, though copying the features exactly, made a much younger man,

Pg-294

with dark hair. The picture in the National Library at Madrid is a copy of the Florence picture. The engraving published by De Bry in 1595 claimed to be from a portrait painted by order of Ferdinand, stolen from the hall of the council of the Indies and brought to the Nether-

copy →

ENGRAVING OF COLUMBUS IN DE BRY.

lands. It has no resemblance to those taken from the portrait of Jovius. The De Bry engraving represents a round face with masses of curls on each side, large eyes without expression, and a blunt nose; all these features being entirely different from the descriptions of Las

Pg-295

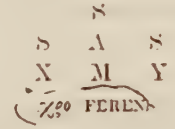
Casas and Oviedo. The picture attributed to Parmigiano at Naples is generally considered to be merely fanciful. A portrait which is said to have belonged to the Cuccaro family, was purchased by the Comte Rosselly de Lorgues, and is attributed by him to Antonio del Rincon, the artist who painted Ferdinand and Isabella, and who lived between 1445 and 1500. But the authenticity of its history is more than doubtful. It is engraved in the Count's life of Columbus. Another portrait has recently been brought to light at Venice by the archæologist Antonio della Rovere, which is said to have been painted by Lorenzo Lotto, possibly by order of Angelo Trivigiano, for transmission to Malipiero in 1500, with the letters and charts of the Admiral.

The portrait at Como alone has any claim to be a likeness, so that the only authentic materials for picturing the appearance of Columbus in our minds are the Como picture and the detailed descriptions of his features recorded by Las Casas and Oviedo.

The character of Columbus was deeply tinged with religious enthusiasm and strong devotional feeling from his earliest youth; and when, probably at a much earlier age than is generally supposed, he became possessed by his one grand idea, his religious feelings became entwined in every worldly thought, and he was impressed with the belief that he was a humble but specially selected instrument for the fulfilment of an Almighty design foretold in prophecy. He strove to keep these thoughts in his memory by day and night, and to bear them in mind, so that they might influence the transactions of each day. The Admiral's invariable signature is an indication of the way religious thoughts pervaded his life. It was an invocation to Jesus, Maria, and Joseph above the words

f9-246

· bearing Christ," and it is seen at the end of every document under his hand



He left instructions for the way it was to be written first X and S above it for *Christus*, M with A above it—*Maria*; and S above that—*Salvi!* then Y with S above it—*Yosephus* below Xpo FERENS, for *Christopher*

Columbus had a very active and imaginative brain, the bright thoughts following each other in rapid succession, and his enthusiastic and impressionable nature produced visions and day-dreams which often impressed him with all the force of reality. Like Joan of Arc, and other gifted beings who have been the instruments to work out great events, Columbus heard voices, which had the practical effect of rousing him from despondency and bracing him to his work. He has recorded two occasions on which this happened, but probably "the voices" made themselves heard at other critical turning-points of his life. Yet there was no danger of his becoming a mere visionary. His clear penetrating intellect saved him from that; and it was this unrivalled power, combined with a brilliant imagination, which constituted his genius. He prepared himself for his great work by long study, by the acquisition of vast experience, and by a minute knowledge of every detail of his profession. But this would not have sufficed. He added to these qualifications a master mind endowed with reasoning powers of a high order, and an ingenious, almost subtle, way of seizing upon and

utilising every point which had a relation to the subject he was considering. His forecasts amount to prevision Assuredly the discovery of the New World was no accident. "His genius and lofty enthusiasm, his ardent and justified previsions, mark the great Admiral as one of the lights of the human race."*

Apart from his genius, Columbus was a very simple-minded man, full of love for his fellow-creatures and a desire for their welfare He was absolutely devoid of any vindictive feeling, although few men ever received greater provocation. Fonseca, Roldan, Bobadilla, Porras, were to him merely obstacles injurious to the public service, nuisances to be removed if possible. But he bore them no ill-will · partly from the natural magnanimity of his disposition, partly from the influence of religion on his thoughts and actions. He was naturally hasty and quick-tempered, but he succeeded almost completely in restraining this tendency by watchfulness and self-restraint.

His powerful intellect and habitual attention to details fitted him for the work of administration, although he was easily imposed upon by plausible villains like Roldan and some of his greatest difficulties were the consequences of this trustfulness and simplicity Yet, if he had been firmly supported from home, the government of Española by the Admiral and his supremely able brother would have been a success. The feeling of the age, which in the time of Columbus was absolutely universal, was that infidel prisoners of war might be treated and sold as slaves. Prince Henry and the Portuguese went much further, and systematically seized upon any natives they could secure. In acting in the spirit of the age, and

* Colonel Yule, "Marco Polo," Introd. i. 102.

Pg-298

Slavery

advising the sale of Caribs and prisoners of war, Columbus hoped that the slaves themselves might receive benefit from conversion to Christianity, while the administrative necessities of the colony were cared for. He had seen how Ferdinand and Isabella acted when the people of Malaga were sold into slavery, with the full sanction of the Church. He had never heard any doubt expressed on the subject, and on this point he was not three centuries in advance of his contemporaries Las Casas, with no responsibility and no administrative anxieties, advocated views which were three centuries in advance of his age. He was in advance of Wilberforce and Clarkson But he was not a contemporary of Columbus, being thirty years his junior. He had not yet raised his voice when the great discoverer died, and much that he urged would have found a warm response in the heart of the Admiral

After the revolt of Roldan, Columbus had allowed a *repartimiento* of Indians with great reluctance, and under extreme pressure, but he imposed various restrictions, with a view to the prevention of ill-treatment. Apart from these administrative necessities which were forced upon him by the exigencies of his position, the relations of Columbus with the natives were friendly and cordial. The men taken as interpreters were kindly treated, and we hear of one at least who had a prosperous career in after life. The Admiral never allowed the people to be ill-used when he could prevent it. Guacanagari was his devoted friend, and the last letter of Columbus to Ferdinand contained an earnest appeal in favour of the natives. In order to show how far Columbus and his brother were in advance of their contemporaries as regards the treatment of the Indians, it is only necessary

to compare their conduct on all occasions with that of Ovando; who is a fair average specimen of the colonial governor of the day.

It was, however, as a navigator that the genius of Columbus found the most suitable field for its display. He was a consummate seaman, and without any equal in that age as a pilot and navigator; while his sense of duty and responsibility gave rise to a watchfulness which was unceasing and untiring. His knowledge of cosmography, of all needful calculations, and of the manipulation of every known instrument was profound; but he showed even greater power in his forecasts of weather, in his reasoning on the effects of winds and currents, and in the marvellous accuracy of his landfalls, even when approaching an unknown coast. He had that capacity for taking trouble without which even genius is but a doubtful blessing. It was in the preparation of charts and journals, in the diligence with which he recorded all useful observations day by day, that Columbus set such a valuable example. His genius was a gift which is only produced once in an age. But his reasoning power carefully trained and cultivated, his diligence as a student, his habits of observation, and the regularity of his work, especially in writing up a journal and taking observations, are qualities which every seaman might usefully study and imitate. He has been accused of carelessness and inaccuracy in his statements. but every instance that has been put forward can be shown to be consistent with accuracy. The blunders were not those of the Admiral, but of his critics. Considering the circumstances under which many of his letters were written, his careful accuracy of statement is remarkable. It is another proof of a mind long trained to orderly and methodical habits.(3)

The Admiral was a man of dignified bearing, fascinating in conversation, and endowed with great eloquence and power of exposition. He was amiable and of a most affectionate disposition, and made many and lasting friendships in all ranks of life. Among his warmest friends were Queen Isabella, Archbishop Deza, the great Cardinal Cisneros, the Cura of Los Palacios, and the Fathers of La Rabida and Las Cuevas. We find his shipmates serving under him over and over again. Terreros his steward, Salcedo his servant, were with him in his first voyage and in his last. Diego Mendez and Bartolomè Fieschi were ready to risk life and limb in his service, and attended on him to the end. Several faithful sailors never left him until the last scene at Valladolid. He was blessed with two loving and devoted brothers, and Bartolomè was his trusty defender and counsellor in his darkest hours of difficulty and distress, his nurse in sickness, and his helpful companion in health. The enduring affection of these two brothers, from the cradle to the grave, is most touching. Columbus was happy too in his sons, who were ever dutiful, and whose welfare and happiness were his fondest care. He never forgot his old home and the companions of his childhood, as is shown by his bequest to the Bank of St. George, and by the provision for poor relations in his will. The last words he ever wrote were, "In the city of Genoa I was born." We reverence and admire his genius, we applaud his large-hearted magnanimity, we urge the study of his life on all seamen as a useful example, but his friendships and the warmth of his affections are the qualities which appeal most to our regard. Columbus was a man to reverence, but he was still more a man to love.

The work of few men in the world's history has had

such a lasting influence on the welfare of the human race as that of Columbus. It created a complete revolution in the thoughts and ideas of the age. It was a landmark and a beacon. It divided the old and the new order of things, and it threw a bright light over the future. In ten years he discovered the way across the Atlantic, he explored the Gulf stream and the regions of the trades, of the westerlies, and the calms; he discovered the Bahamas and the West Indies; he inspired the work of Cabot and Cortereal; and he or his pupils discovered the coasts of the new continent from 8° S. of the equator to the Gulf of Honduras. But the greatest achievement was the first voyage across the ocean. It broke the spell and opened a new era. All else he did, and all that was done after his death for the next fifty years, followed as a natural consequence. The originator and supreme leader of all, was Christopher Columbus

---

NOTES.

(1) *The Will of Columbus.*

Columbus was authorised to establish an entail or *mayorazgo* by letters patent dated April 23, 1497. On January 22, 1498, he accordingly executed a deed of entail in favour of his son Diego, which was confirmed by the sovereigns on September 28, 1501. In 1502, before sailing on his last voyage, he executed a new entail of his goods, which he deposited in the monastery of Las Cuevas. This document is lost. On August 25, 1505, the Admiral wrote a codicil at Segovia, and two days before his death, on May 19, 1506, he ratified it before witnesses. Another codicil was executed at Valladolid.

In the Segovia codicil he appointed his sons to be executors, and confirmed the entailing deeds, settling his rights, privileges, and estates on Diego and his heirs male, then on Fernando and his heirs male, then on his brothers in succession, and failing all these, on his nearest relation. If his rents are ever recovered

Pg-302

His will continued...

in the Indies, his son Fernando to receive one *cuento* and a half annually, his brother Bartolomè 150,000 maravedis, his other brother 100,000 maravedis. His eldest son Diego to inherit all his offices and estates, one tenth part to be given to poor relations who appear to be most in need, and in works of charity. Of the other nine parts, two to be set apart and divided into thirty-five parts, of which twenty-seven parts to belong to Fernando, five to Bartolomè, and three to Diego the brother. His eldest son to maintain a chapel with three priests, to say masses for the souls of the Admiral, his father, mother, and wife: the chapel, if possible, to be at Concepcion, in the Vega Real of Española. Diego to pay the debts contained in an accompanying list, and any others that appear to be honestly due; and Beatriz Enriquez is commended to the care of his son. The creditors in the list are Genoese and a Jew living at Lisbon.

The other codicil, concerning the authenticity of which there has been a doubt, is believed to be authentic by Mr Harrisse. In it Diego and the heirs of the entail are desired always to maintain a person of the Admiral's family at Genoa, who has a house and a wife, so that he may live honourably, "that our lineage may have a root in that city, for from it I came, and in it I was born."

(2) *Question of the removal of the Admiral's body.*

In the year 1877, during the work of repairing the pavement of the chancel of the cathedral of San Domingo, two lead coffins were discovered, containing the remains of Luis and Cristoval Colon y Toledo, grandsons of the Admiral. A story was spread abroad that when the Spaniards removed the ashes to Havana in 1795, they had mistaken the coffin, and that the real coffin of the Admiral was still at San Domingo. The clergy of the cathedral made an attempt to establish their case, by concealing the leaden inscription on the coffin of Don Luis, because that of Cristoval was exactly like it as regards the lettering, which was German-Gothic. The Admiral was interred on the gospel side of the altar. The coffins of his grandsons are on the epistle side.

(3) *Note on the alleged inaccuracies of Columbus.*

There are three passages in the writings of Columbus on which the charge of habitual carelessness and inaccuracy is

Pg - 303

based One occurs in a letter written in a vessel of 20 tons in a furious gale of wind in the Atlantic, the other in a letter written from a bed of sickness in the midst of the Jamaica hardships, and the third when he was dying. This is a small basis on which to found a general charge, yet it can be shown to be without anything to sustain it, in all three instances.

The first is that he dated his letter "*Canaria 15th Febrero* 1493," when he was off the Azores. The quotation is from a careless copy of the letter at Simancas. "*Stamaria*" was read by the copying-clerk as "*Canaria*," and 15 for 18. The correct version, found by Varnhagen, is "*Santa Maria 18 Febrero* 1493." Columbus was quite accurate.

The second is that, in the letter from Jamaica (*Nav.* i. 311), he said, "Yo viné a servir de veinte y ocho años." Bossi, Navarrete, and even Major think this is a mistake. All assume that he intended to say, "I came to serve your Highnesses (of Spain) at the age of twenty-eight," when he was really at least thirty-eight or forty when he came to Spain. But he did not say so, and he did not mean it. He said, "I came to serve at twenty-eight years," that is, "I left my home and came to serve (in this business of discovering the Indies) at twenty-eight." He is not alluding to Spain especially. That is exactly what he did do. He left his home at the age of twenty-eight, and from that time until he was wrecked at Jamaica, he was constantly serving. He is perfectly accurate.

The third is that in a letter to King Ferdinand (*Nav.* ii. 527) without date, but written a few months before he died, he said that in fourteen years he could not get the King of Portugal to understand what he said. The critics point this out as a gross blunder, for Columbus was only about ten years in Portugal and not fourteen. He came to Portugal in 1474, and left in 1484, but he was at Lisbon again in 1488, when he no doubt once more tried to make the King of Portugal understand. From 1474 to 1488 is exactly fourteen years. Again he is perfectly accurate.

The logical conclusion is that true criticism should assume so able a man as Columbus to be correct, when an apparent difficulty occurs in his writings, and that the blunder is on the side of the fault-finders.

P 304

Diego succeeded to his Father's titles and some of his Rights.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE ADMIRAL'S SONS.

I.—DIEGO AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

THE two sons of Columbus lived to see the completion of their father's work by the circumnavigation of the globe. The *Victoria* arrived at San Lucar on the 6th of September 1522. Diego succeeded to the Admiral's titles and recovered some of his rights. Fernando devoted his life to the study of his father's professional work, and to the preservation of memorials of his deeds. Both were tall, handsome young men: Diego being twenty-eight and Fernando eighteen years of age at the time of their father's death. Diego succeeded at once to the title of Admiral of the Ocean Sea. In their uncle Bartolomè they had a wise and experienced counsellor. He had already made a favourable impression on the new sovereigns, and Philip I. issued an order that what was due to the deceased Admiral should be paid to his heir. But Philip died very suddenly in September 1506, after a reign, in his wife's name, of little more than four months. He was the same age as Diego, the recognition of whose rights would again be dependent on the will of the faithless old king. Ferdinand was absent at Naples until the following year.

Fernando devoted his Life.

Philip died Sept. 1506

Very soon after the young king's death Bartolomè Columbus undertook a journey to Rome, in the hope of

inducing the Pope, Julius II., to recommend the propriety of another colonising expedition. His efforts were fruitless. He appears, however, to have written an account of Veragua for one of the canons of the Lateran, a résumé of which is preserved in the Magliabechiana Library.* Bartolomè had returned to Spain in 1508.

The young Admiral continued to urge the restitution of the rights inherited from his father, with importunate vigour. He had the advantages of an intimate acquaintance with the court, of youth, health, and popularity. Once Ferdinand said to him, "Look here, Admiral! I would confer it on you, but not if I am only to grant it for your sons and successors." "Sir," replied Diego, "is it reasonable that I should be punished for the sins of heirs who perhaps will never exist?" But the old fox continued to delay and evade a direct answer, until at length Diego asked for permission to bring a suit and obtain a decision from a court of justice. The King was induced to give his consent to such a trial, and it was a fortunate thing for posterity that this legal process was sanctioned and recorded. Many most interesting details appeared in the evidence that are not found elsewhere, including incidents in the Admiral's career and in those of his companions. It was as a witness in this trial that the good physician of Palos related the touching story of the arrival of Columbus at the convent gate of La Rabida with his little son. Las Casas expresses indignation at the attempts of the judge to diminish the glory of the great Admiral's services, but the testimony that was collected rather tended to

* Published by Mr. Harrisse in his *Bibliotheca Americana Vetustissima*, p. 471.

Pg-306

Judgment in favor of Columbus and his heirs.

make the light of his fame to shine more brightly The judgment was in favour of the Admiral and his heirs

Diego Columbus was a handsome and gallant young courtier, and he won the love of a lady of very high rank. Doña Maria de Toledo y Roxas was the daughter of Don Fernando de Toledo, Lord of Villora, Comendador Mayor of Leon, and Grand Huntsman of Castille. Her uncle was the second Duke of Alva Her grandmother was Maria Enriquez, sister of King Ferdinand's mother This near relation of the King was a young lady of spirit and energy, and devoted her life to the interests of her husband and children She never rested until the influence of her uncle and father had extorted the long-sought act of justice from their cousin the King. There can be little doubt that the marriage, and not a sense of abstract right, explains the character of the sentence and its acceptance by Ferdinand.

Aug. 1508 Admiral Diego Columbus became Gov. of the Indies

On the 9th of August 1508 the young Admiral, Diego Columbus, was appointed Governor of the Indies A fleet was equipped at San Lucar, and in the end of May 1509 he embarked with his wife Maria de Toledo and many ladies of her household, his uncles Bartolomé and Diego, and his brother Fernando. Arriving at San Domingo in July, the young Admiral assumed the government of Española, superseding the cruel Ovando, who went home, and died four days after he landed in Spain Young Fernando also went back, as captain-general of the returning fleet, as he was desirous of completing his studies. Juan Ponce de Leon had been made governor of San Juan or Puerto Rico, Esquivel one of the most ruthless of Ovando's bloodhounds, was sent to reduce Jamaica: and in 1511 the young Admiral sent Diego Velasquez to

RUINS OF THE PALACE BUILT BY DIEGO COLUMBUS AT SAN DOMINGO.

Pg-309

colonise Cuba, its insular character having been determined by Ocampo in 1508

When Diego Columbus arrived in Española, there were four personages already residing there, one of whom was destined to record his great father's achievements, and the other three to complete them These were Bartolomè de Las Casas, the defender of the Indians, Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, the discoverer of the South Sea; Hernan Cortes, the conqueror of Mexico, and Francisco Pizarro, the conqueror of Peru.

Diego did not find the colonists of Española much easier to govern than had his father They had nearly exterminated the native population, the kidnapped victims from the Bahamas were rapidly following their predecessors, and the denunciations of slavery by the Dominican monks fell on deaf ears With the approval of Ferdinand, negro slaves were beginning to replace the Indians, who were dying by thousands. In October 1511 a Court of Appeal was instituted for San Domingo, called the *Audiencia*, and the new governor met with enemies and fomenters of trouble among the lawyers, while the conduct of the treasurer, Miguel Pasamonte, was hostile and insubordinate The young Admiral found it necessary to make voyages to Spain in 1512 and 1513, to defend his conduct, and again in 1515. King Ferdinand died on the 23rd of January 1516, and the government of Spain was conducted by Cardinal Cisneros until 1520, when Charles arrived from the Low Countries. Diego Columbus returned to Española in September 1520, and commenced the building of a stone palace of some architectural pretensions, the ruins of which may still be seen. It was destined to be the abode of his Vice-Queen Maria for many years, and here most of his children were born

Bishop Fonseca continued to hold office, and to mismanage the affairs of the Indies. One of his worst blunders was the selection of Alonzo de Ojeda and Diego de Nicuesa to colonise the coast of the mainland discovered by Bastidas and the Admiral. The territory of Ojeda was to extend from Cabo de la Vela to Darien, to be called "Nueva Andalusia", and Nicuesa was to be governor of a province including Veragua, to which the name of "Castilla del Oro" was given. Ojeda had already shown himself to be unfit for separate command, but he was a favourite of Fonseca. The appointment of Nicuesa was a slight to the young Admiral whose father had discovered Veragua, and a great injustice to his uncle Bartolomè, whose claims had been passed over, although his proved courage and ability pointed him out as the proper man for the place.

Ojeda was nearly penniless, but he was supplied with funds by the famous pilot Juan de la Cosa, who was to accompany him, and by a lawyer named Martin Fernandez de Enciso, who was to follow with reinforcements. Nicuesa was accompanied by an officer named Rodrigo de Colmenares, as his second in command. The two expeditions arrived at San Domingo, where it was agreed that the river Atrato should be the boundary of their respective jurisdictions. Ojeda sailed from San Domingo with four vessels and 300 men, on the 12th of November 1509, and Nicuesa started about ten days afterwards with five vessels and 650 men.

The hot-headed and incapable Ojeda landed at Calaman, near the present town of Cartagena, and immediately made an unprovoked attack upon an Indian town, called Turbaco. He was entirely defeated by the valiant natives, upwards of seventy Spaniards perished,

Pg- 311

including Juan de la Cosa, and Ojeda himself only escaped by hiding in the forest, where his people found him after a long search, half starved, and in a miserable condition. Meanwhile Nicuesa's squadron arrived, and the two commanders took their revenge by a horrible slaughter at Turbaco, men, women, and children being indiscriminately massacred. The body of Juan de la Cosa was found, but in a shocking state, owing to the effect of poisoned arrows The rival governors then sailed for their respective territories, Ojeda arriving in the gulf of Uraba or Darien, and founding a town on its eastern shore, named San Sebastian. Ojeda made no provision for obtaining food, and famine soon made its appearance, while the condition of the settlers was aggravated by frequent attacks from the natives, armed with poisoned arrows He determined to return to Española for supplies, leaving Francisco Pizarro as his lieutenant, with instructions to return himself with the rest of the people, if they were not relieved within fifty days Ojeda quarrelled with the crew of the vessel in which he took a passage, and was put in irons. The vessel was wrecked on the coast of Cuba, and the crew succeeded in reaching Jamaica, whence Ojeda was sent to San Domingo by the governor Esquivel, where he lived for some time. He died there in extreme poverty in 1515

Pizarro embarked the starving settlers of San Sebastian in two brigantines and sailed for Española, but he had scarcely left the bay when he encountered Enciso bringing reinforcements in two small vessels Soon after Enciso had left San Domingo, a stowaway was found headed up in a cask, who had adopted this means of escaping from his creditors Enciso was furious, and threatened to maroon him, but he was pacified after some

Pg-312

BALBOA

time The escaped debtor was Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, one of the companions of Bastidas, a soldier aged about thirty-five, who afterwards proved himself to be a valiant and most capable leader of men. They all returned to San Sebastian, but Enciso's ship, through bad seamanship, was run upon a rock and became a complete wreck, a great part of the provisions being lost. The people landed, both the new-comers brought by Enciso, and the old settlers under Pizarro; but they found the fort at San Sebastian destroyed, and themselves exposed to the hostile attacks of the brave natives. They were in despair. The lawyer Enciso was incapable and helpless

Vasco Nuñez de Balboa naturally came to the front. He cheered up the desponding, and provided a remedy for their misfortune Using the experience he had gained in the voyage of Bastidas, he told his comrades that the natives of the western side of the gulf had no poisoned arrows, and that they would be comparatively safe on that side They crossed the gulf of Uraba, defeated the hostile natives, got supplies from their villages, and founded a settlement under the invocation of the well-known image at Seville, Nuestra Señora de la Antigua Enciso was deposed as incompetent, and Vasco Nuñez would have been made governor if, just at that time, Colmenares, the lieutenant of Nicuesa, had not arrived with supplies. Colmenares persuaded the settlers to accept Nicuesa as successor to Ojeda, and governor of both the provinces

Nicuesa had, meanwhile shown greater incapacity than either Ojeda or Enciso, if that were possible He lost his ship and all his provisions by blundering on to a river bar, suffered fearfully from hardships caused by want of forethought, and when at last he collected the remnant of his people at Nombre de Dios, in December

Pg 313

1510, there were about seventy left, out of the original complement of over six hundred. Starvation led to the cutting of all the bonds of discipline, and Colmenares found his chief at last, being merely one of a little band of famine-stricken wretches. To such a condition had his incapacity reduced the well-equipped expedition which left San Domingo only a year before. In his adversity he had shown neither temper nor sympathy for his comrades, and when he reached Darien the settlers refused to receive him. He sailed away in a small brigantine, and was never heard of again.

Vasco Nuñez de Balboa became the undisputed governor of Darien. He was a handsome man, cheery and good-humoured, with great natural ability, patient, enduring, and full of resource, and endowed with all the qualities needed in a commander. He sent Enciso home, accompanied by two leading settlers, named Zamudio and Valdivia, who were to give a true account of the course of events. Enciso had given Vasco Nuñez a very low opinion of lawyers, and he entreated the King not to allow any more to come to the colony, because "they are devils and lead the lives of devils, and not only are they themselves evil, but they give rise to a thousand lawsuits and quarrels."

But Enciso, although incapable of leading men, was an author of some merit, and his work on navigation, entitled "Suma de Geografia," is one of the earliest books of the kind. Besides tables of the sun's declination, it contains curious accounts of the various countries of the world, including some notices of Darien or Uraba

The first act of Vasco Nuñez was to fetch the starving remnant of Nicuesa's people from Nombre de Dios, and on his way he captured a cacique of the isthmus named

P9-314

Careta, who became a firm ally, and whose daughter he married. The policy of this elected ruler, to whom chance had offered such grand opportunities, was humane and prudent. There is more of diplomacy and negotiation than of massacre and oppression, in the history of his dealings with the natives. His sympathy for the sufferings of his own men ensured him just popularity among the wild and reckless spirits who formed his colony. He cheerfully shared their hardships, and attended to the comforts of the sick; while his measures usually combined energy with prudence. His chief lieutenants were Colmenares, Pizarro, and Alonzo Martin. His alliance with Careta, the chief of Cueva, was a wise and statesmanlike measure. His treatment of the cacique of Coiba secured the little colony of Darien a most valuable ally. The visit to the wealthy chief of Comogre, from whose son the first news of the existence of the great South Sea was received, added another nation to the list of the allies of Vasco Nuñez. His romantic expedition to Dabaybe was unstained by the atrocities which usually marked the proceedings of Spanish explorers. These achievements quite established his position as a wise and successful governor; and in January 1513, before setting out to discover the South Sea, he wrote a long and very interesting despatch to King Ferdinand, reporting the course of events, and very fully explaining the position and needs of the colony.

In the following September Vasco Nuñez de Balboa set out to complete the work of the great Admiral in one direction by discovering the South Sea. Columbus knew it was there, but sought to reach it by a strait. His successor revealed the dividing isthmus. Vasco

Nuñez went by sea to the territory of Careta, with 190 well-armed men. Routing the hostile forces of a hill chief named Quarequa, he obtained guides and ascended the mountain range until, after a tedious and difficult journey of twenty-five days, he attained the summit ridge on the 25th of September 1513, seven years after the death of Columbus.

Vasco Nuñez told his men to rest themselves, while he walked up to the summit alone. The wide expanse of ocean was suddenly spread out before him. He fell on his knees and gave thanks to God, then beckoned to his followers to come up, and they all sang the "Te Deum." A great cross was formed out of felled trees, and set up on high, by piling stones round its base. Descending the mountain, the discoverer made friends with a chief named Chiapes, whose territory was on the southern slope, and he sent forward Francisco Pizarro, Alonso Martin, and Juan de Escaray, with twelve men, to find the shortest way to the sea-shore. Alonso Martin, accompanied by Blas de Atienza, came to a place where there were two canoes, and as soon as the rising tide floated them, they got in and called upon their comrades to bear witness that Martin was the first, and Atienza the second man that ever embarked on the South Sea. Martin returned with the news, and Vasco Nuñez requested the cacique Chiapes to accompany him with some of his people, and went down to the beach. Advancing into the water up to his thighs, with a sword and shield, he took possession of all that South Sea, and of all that appertained to it, in the name of the sovereigns of Spain. He afterwards made an expedition in canoes to explore the Gulf of San Miguel, and returned to Darien in January 1514, after an absence of four months.

P9-316

It would have been wise if King Ferdinand had confirmed the appointment of Vasco Nuñez de Balboa. But he had been prejudiced by Enciso and others, and he selected an arbitrary, ill-tempered old man, a sort of second Bobadilla, named Pedrarias de Avila, at the recommendation of Bishop Fonseca. The new governor came out accompanied by the Bishop Quevedo; the future historian Oviedo; Enciso, burning for vengeance on Vasco Nuñez; Hernando de Soto, the future discoverer of the Mississippi; Belalcazar, the conqueror of Quito; Pascual de Andagoya, and other men of note. In the end of July 1514 Pedrarias arrived at Darien. Violent and incapable, he undid all the good that the wise and conciliatory policy of Vasco Nuñez had wrought on the isthmus. Expeditions were sent in all directions, led by savage and cruel adventurers, who spread devastation and ruin wherever they went. The historian Oviedo is not considered to have been a very humane man, but the horrors of Darien were too much for him, and he returned to Spain. In 1517 Pedrarias caused the discoverer of the South Sea to be beheaded, on false charges, and thus destroyed one of the ablest leaders in the New World. It was a melancholy fate, and the more to be regretted because, if the few men possessed of the good sense and ability of Vasco Nuñez had been entrusted with power, the history of the native race might have been different. Ferdinand, guided by Fonseca, invariably selected the very worst and most unfit men that could be found in Spain for high commands, such as Margarit, Bobadilla, Ojeda, Nicuesa, and Pedrarias. Really great and able leaders, like Columbus and Vasco Nuñez, were either forced upon him or rejected.

The discovery of the South Sea solved one of the great problems that presented themselves to Columbus, the

passage to the strait far to the south, and the circumnavigation forming a natural sequence of events. The arrival of Sebastian del Cano* at San Lucar in 1522, forged the last link of the chain which had its origin in the port of Palos in 1492, an interval of only thirty years. Meanwhile the Admiral's work was extended westward and northward from his landfall on the Honduras coast. His own pupil, Vicente Yanez Pinzon, accompanied by Juan de Solis, had carried on the discovery thence to the Yucatan coast, in the very year of their old commander's death; but it was not until ten years afterwards that Hernandez de Cordova accidentally hit upon the same country, near Cape Catoche. His report induced Velasquez, the governor of Cuba, to send a small expedition under Juan de Grijalva from Santiago in May 1518, accompanied by the more famous Pedro de Alvarado. They touched at the Tabasco river, and explored the Mexican coast as far as Panuco. The conquest of Mexico by Hernando Cortes followed in 1519, and thus was the work completed, which the great Admiral left for a successor, when he gave up the alluring suggestion of going to the land whence the richly freighted canoe had come, at the Isle of Pines. His duty, as he then saw it, called him to explore the coast in search of a strait, in the opposite direction.

After the complete failure of Ojeda and Nicuesa, the government of Veragua was at length offered to the Adelantado Bartolomè Columbus The young Admiral had watched the blunders of the incapable adventurers who unjustly occupied his uncle's rightful place, with anger and contempt. At length justice was done, but it was too late. The Adelantado had received a grant of land

* *Not* Delcano, as the name is sometimes erroneously written.

Pg - 318

He died 2/21/1526 and was interred with his father & uncle.

around Fort Concepcion, in the Vega Real, and had resided for some years in Española under his nephew's rule. The island of Mona, between Española and Costa Rica, was also ceded to him. He died in December 1514. He had probably just returned to Seville, for his body was placed, with that of the Admiral, in the chapel of Santa Ana, in the monastery of Las Cuevas. The two brothers rested side by side.

Harassing accusations were continuously brought against the young Admiral, as they had been against his father, and in 1519 he was obliged to return to Spain to disprove them, leaving his wife and children at San Domingo. He was present at the grand assembly summoned to Barcelona by Charles V., and accompanied the Emperor to Cologne. He triumphantly disproved all the slanders against him, and received the title of Viceroy, which had been withheld by Ferdinand. In 1523 he was again in Spain, having first made his will at San Domingo on the 8th of September. He once more cleared himself of all charges, and the Emperor held him in high esteem. The young Admiral started from Toledo, to be present at the marriage of Charles V. with Isabella of Portugal, but he was taken seriously ill on the road, and stopped at the house of a friend named Alonzo Tellez Pacheco, at Montalban. He died there on the 21st of February 1526, and was interred with his father and uncle in the monastery of Las Cuevas at Seville. He survived his father twenty years, and had governed Española for eighteen years.

His 4 daughters never married.

He left four daughters: Felipa, who never married; Maria, wife of Luis de Cardona, Marquis of Guadaleste and Admiral of Aragon; Juana, married in 1537 to Luis de la Cueva, brother of the Duke of Albuquerque.

P9-319

and Isabel, wife of Jorge de Portugallo, Count of Gelves; and three sons Luis was his heir, Cristoval continued the line, and Diego died before his father

The Vice-Queen, Maria de Toledo, was in San Domingo with her children when her husband died. She did not return to Spain until 1529, when she came to urge the claims and protect the rights of her son Luis, who was born in 1522. Courageous and devoted, this noble lady fought her son's battle during fourteen years. In 1542 she returned to San Domingo with the bodies of the great Admiral and of her husband. Dying there on the 11th of May 1549, she was buried in the cathedral by the side of her husband. Her son Luis succeeded his father in 1526, and, owing to a judgment pronounced by Cardinal Garcia de Loaysa in 1536, he had to renounce the Viceroyalty and other great hereditary rights and privileges granted to the Admiral his grandfather, receiving in their place an annuity of 10,000 ducats, the island of Jamaica in fief, and the dukedom of Veragua. He retained the title of Admiral of the Ocean Sea. In 1540 he returned to Española with the title of Captain-General After occupying that post for ten years, he went back to Spain in 1551, and was married at Valladolid in 1554, when he had two wives still living at San Domingo. In 1556 Philip II. deprived him of his Jamaica fief, and reduced his pension Soon afterwards his matrimonial irregularities led to a criminal prosecution, and he was banished to Oran, where he died in 1572, aged fifty years. His remains were conveyed to San Domingo, and buried in the cathedral He left two legitimate daughters by his first wife, named Maria and Felipa The eldest became a nun Felipa was married to her cousin Diego, son of Cristoval and nephew

79-320

of Luis. Diego's father, Cristoval, died in the same year as his brother Luis, so that Diego became the second Duke of Veragua. He was the last male of the family of Columbus. He died in 1578, leaving a daughter named Maria, who married an obscure Creole in Española.

Diego, the second Duke of Veragua, had a sister named Francisca, who lived at Panama, and married the licentiate Diego Ortegon, a judge at Quito. Her daughter Josefa was the wife of Paz de la Serna, and mother of Josefa, who, in 1651, married Martin de Larreategui of Eybar, in Guipuzcoa. The Larreateguis were thus the nearest heirs of the great Admiral, and to the dukedom of Veragua.

But from 1578 to 1790, for upwards of two centuries, there was a usurpation of the title by descendants of the daughters of Diego Columbus, the second Admiral; the Larreateguis having a prior right as descendants of one of his sons. The rightful heir, when the second Duke died, appears to have been poor and resident in the Indies while the usurpers were powerful noblemen who could push their claims at court. Cristoval de Cardona, Marquis of Guadaleste and Admiral of Aragon, was recognised as third Duke of Veragua, when Diego Columbus, the second Duke, died in 1578. He was a son of Maria, the second daughter of Diego, the second Admiral. When he died in 1583 without children, the title remained in abeyance until the Council of the Indies adjudged it to Nuño de Portugallo, Count of Gelves, in 1608. He was grandson of Jorge de Portugallo, Count of Gelves, who married Isabel, fourth daughter of the second Admiral. Nuño became fourth Duke of Veragua, and received possession of the iron box containing all the title-deeds and other documents deposited at the monas-

Pg-321

tory of Las Cuevas The titles of Duke and Admiral remained in the male line of Portugallos, Counts of Gelves, for five generations. The heiress Catarina was Duchess of Veragua, and she married James Stuart, second Duke of Berwick and Liria, and died in 1740 The Stuarts enjoyed the titles for three generations, although an almost interminable lawsuit had been brought against them by the rightful heirs

STUARTS

At length the lawsuit terminated, in 1790, in favour of Don Mariano Larreategui, descended from Francisca Columbus, who married Diego Ortegon He became Duke of Veragua and Admiral of the Ocean Sea, and also received the custody of the iron box, containing the title-deeds and letters of the great Admiral, which are now in the house of his grandson at Madrid They were published by Navarrete in 1825.

His Excellency Don Cristoval Colon de la Cerda y Larreategui, Duke of Veragua and Admiral, ex-Minister of Public Works, and Vice-President of the International Congress in 1892 for celebrating the four hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America, is the heir and direct descendant of the Admiral, Cristoval Columbus Born in 1837, he succeeded to the dukedom on the death of his father in 1866, and has a young son and heir named Cristoval, born in 1878

It is pleasant to know that the great Admiral still has heirs and representatives who religiously preserve his archives and revere his memory

Pg-322

SONS:

CHAPTER XVII.

THE ADMIRAL'S SONS

II.—HERNANDO, AND THE OTHER AUTHORITIES FOR THE LIFE OF COLUMBUS.

HIS 2nd SON FERNANDO

by BEATRIZ ENRIQUEZ

Fernando, the second son of Christopher Columbus by Beatriz Arana y Enriquez, was born at Cordova on the 15th of August 1488, and continued to live with his mother until he became a Queen's Page, at the age of ten, in February 1498. After being at court for four years, he went to sea with his father, and passed through all the terrible hardships and sufferings of the last voyage, off the coast of Veragua and at Jamaica. He performed this service between the ages of fourteen and sixteen, taking his full share of the work, cheering and encouraging his shipmates, and making himself useful to the Admiral, to whom he must have been the greatest possible comfort. On returning home, his father sent him from Seville with his uncle Bartolomè, in June 1505, to kiss the King's hand and report himself. Diego and Fernando nursed their father in his last illness, and attended him on his deathbed. The younger son was left very well off, receiving an independent fortune. But the two brothers were warmly attached to each other; and when Diego recovered some of his inheritance, and went out to Española as Governor in 1509, he

HAD A FORTUNE

Pg-323

was accompanied by Fernando, who rejoiced to see one of the most cherished desires of his father accomplished. Fernando remained for a few months at San Domingo,

PORTION OF THE WEST INDIES
(From the Weimar Map of 1527, ascribed to Fernando Columbus.)

and then returned to Spain with the object of completing his studies.

Fernando Columbus devoted considerable ability and learning, combined with great industry and a love of literature for its own sake, to the grateful task of

Pg-324

honouring his great father's memory. He acquired a practical knowledge of navigation as a boy, and he mastered the science of cosmography in after life, becoming an accomplished mathematician and a draughtsman. The Weimar map of 1527,* and a chart showing the dividing line of the Papal Bull, have been attributed to him. When only twenty-two years of age he wrote a Latin treatise on circumnavigation, called 'Colon de concordia," which he presented to his father's friend, the famous Cardinal Ximenes de Cisneros, and received a grateful letter of acceptance. Fernando was also a poet and a jurist; but his favourite occupation was the collection of books for the formation of a large and permanent library at Seville. He was thus engaged, at intervals, for more than a quarter of a century, visiting all the chief book marts of Europe, and, as he always made an entry of the date and place of purchase, his travels can be accurately traced by reference to his books.

1512-1515 FERNANDO Columbus

In 1512 Fernando Columbus paid the first out of several visits to Rome, and resided there for a year; and in 1515, when he was again in Italy, he visited Genoa, and must have examined all the old haunts of his father in the city and at Savona with intense interest. In the following year he was at Rome and Florence, returning to Spain on the death of King Ferdinand. Fernando's worth and fine qualities were appreciated by the new sovereign Charles V, with whom he appears to have been a great favourite. He attended the Emperor to the Low Countries, and was present at the coronation at Aix-la-Chapelle. At Louvain he made the acquaintance of Erasmus, who presented him with one of his works; and he formed a friendship with two learned

* Facsimile published by J. G. Kohl, Weimar, 1860.

Flemings, Johan Vœsius and Nicolas Cheynaerts, who afterwards joined him at Seville. Fernando was with the Emperor at Worms in 1520, and extended his travels to Genoa and Venice, to Nuremburg, Frankfort, and Cologne. In June 1522 he went to England with the Emperor, visiting London, and returning thence to Spain by sea.

Fernando rested at Seville for about a year, probably engaged in writing memoirs relating to his father, and treatises, such as that on the reasons for the belief in a westerly voyage. But in 1524 he was summoned from his retirement, and nominated one of the arbitrators to meet at Badajoz, and adjudicate the respective claims of Spain and Portugal on the Moluccas. He was the author of four memoirs on the subject. He spent the autumn of 1525 at Rome, and during the four succeeding years he was superintending the building of a handsome house at Seville, with a fine portico of marbles brought from Genoa. It was situated in the centre of a beautiful garden planted with trees and shrubs sent to him from the Indies. The house, where his splendid library first found a resting-place, has long since disappeared; but one of the trees of the garden remained until quite lately—a star appletree (*Chrysophyllum Cainito*). A cutting was taken from it, and is now growing in the garden of Don José M. Asensio, the historian of Columbus. Fernando was well able to afford the necessary expenditure on his house, library, and garden, for his two pensions from the Emperor, added to his revenues from the Indies, brought him in an income equivalent to £7500 a year at the present day.

In 1526 Fernando was charged with the presidency of a commission of cosmographers and pilots to correct marine

Pg 326

charts, and to construct a *mappe monde* showing the countries lately discovered In the following year he was requested, during the absence of Sebastian Cabot in the River Plate, to preside over the examinations of pilots, assisted by Diego Ribero and Alonso de Chaves, two learned mathematicians and cosmographers

These useful labours were interrupted, in 1530, by visits to Perugia and Rome, and to Bologna to be present at the Emperor's Italian coronation Fernando resided for some time at the university of Alcala de Henares, and, in 1535, made a tour into France, visiting Montpellier and Lyons. From that time he did not leave his house at Seville, and in 1537 he founded a school of mathematics and navigation there, which was called "El Colegio Imperial" He made his will on July 3rd, 1539, and at the time of his death, in the same year, he was engaged on a catalogue of his library

FERNANDO TALL & HANDSOME

Fernando Columbus is described as a tall handsome man, and in his later years he became very stout. He was learned and eloquent, with pleasing manners and very agreeable in conversation Never married, he led a blameless life, and devoted his time to his library, to work connected with the public service, and to recording the deeds and preserving memorials of his beloved and revered father The Admiral was happy in both his sons Diego fulfilled the wishes nearest to his father's heart, by recovering his rights and privileges. Fernando did more than any other contemporary to make the deeds of the great discoverer known to posterity Fernando was buried in the cathedral of Seville, where his tomb may still be visited by those who respect true worth and devoted filial piety

The library of Fernando Columbus comprised from

12,000 to 20,000 volumes. By his will he left it to his nephew Luis; and, if the legacy was declined, it was bequeathed to the Chapter of Seville Cathedral. Luis resigned his right, and the chapter received possession of the library in 1552. It has since been called "La Biblioteca Colombina." For a century and a half it was shamefully neglected; and, when a new catalogue was made in 1684, only about 5000 volumes remained. Its value is now better understood, and it occupies two long rooms over the cloister of Seville Cathedral. Next to the authorship of the Admiral's life, the greatest service done by Fernando Columbus to posterity is the preservation of some of the most interesting of his father's books, containing his marginal notes.

In the inner library there is an ebony table made as a stand for a glass case containing the most precious relics of the great Admiral—the books with marginal notes in his own handwriting. They are four in number. The first is the closely studied "Imago Mundi" of Cardinal Petrus de Alliaco or Pierre d'Ailly, with several interesting marginal notes by the Admiral. The second is a Latin copy of Marco Polo, printed in 1485, with marginal notes, which belonged to the Admiral, as Fernando had another copy in his library. The third is the "Historia Rerum ubique Gestarum" of Pope Pius II. (Æneas Sylvius), printed in 1478. The Admiral quotes from this work* in his letter from Jamaica, so that he probably had it with him in his last voyage. In a fly-leaf the original letter in Latin, from Toscanelli, was found. The fourth is the manuscript of seventy leaves, containing the "*Profecias de la recuperacion de la santa*

* Navarrete 1 p. 307

Pg-328

ciudad de Hierusalem y del descubrimiento de las Indias," by Columbus himself

The existence of these treasures is due to the pious care of Fernando, who also completed a memoir of his father in 107 chapters, written at different times, and often probably with long intervals Unfortunately the Spanish original is lost. An Italian translation, by Alfonso Ulloa, was published at Venice in 1571, thirty-two years after the death of Fernando Columbus, and a second edition at Milan in 1614 Other editions have followed, the latest being that by Dulau, published in London in 1867. The original title was "*Historie del Signor Don Fernando Colombo nelle quali s'ha particolare e vera relatione della vita e de i fatti dell Ammiraglio D. Christoforo Colombo suo padre.*" A pamphlet, published by Mr. Harrisse at Seville, in 1871 raised a doubt as to the authenticity of the Italian version, which was stoutly defended by D'Avezac, by Duro in his "Colon y Pinzon" (1883), and by Dr. Prospero Peragallo, who wrote a considerable book on the subject, published at Genoa in 1884. The controversy has raged for twenty years The question is, however, settled by an examination of the history by Las Casas The whole of the first ten chapters of the Italian translation will be found, almost word for word, in fifteen chapters of Las Casas, and Las Casas frequently quotes Fernando Columbus in other places. As all these passages agree with the Italian version, both must have been correctly copied from the original manuscript of Fernando. It may, therefore, be assumed that the remainder of the Italian translation is fairly reliable. There is, however, reason for thinking that Ulloa took some of the earlier chapters from Las Casas, and not from the original. This work has been the chief source

Pg- 329

whence materials have been obtained for the early life of Columbus down to 1492, and for some details of the last voyage. But it must be used with caution, for Fernando himself raises a warning. He says (cap. iv.) "Di quali viaggi, e di *molte altre cose* di quei primi dì, io non ho pena notizia; perciocchè egli venne a morte a tempo che io non aveva tanto ardire o pratica, per la riverenza filiale, che io ardissi di richiedermi di cotale cose: o, per parlare più veramente, allora mi ritrovava io, come giovane, molto lontano da cotal pensiero." This accounts for such mistakes as those respecting the Perestrelo connection, and the command of King René's galley.

There were four other historians who were personally acquainted with Columbus or his sons, and whose works, together with the writings of the Admiral himself, complete the sources for the life of the great navigator. Of these, Bartolomè Las Casas is by far the most important, from his intimate personal knowledge of many of the actors in the scenes he describes. Bartolomè, when very young, witnessed the entry of Columbus into Seville, when he returned from his great discovery. His father accompanied the Admiral on his second voyage. Las Casas himself went out with Ovando to Española, where he took orders, and eventually joined the Dominicans. He was many years in the Indies, and devoted them to endeavours to ameliorate the condition of the natives and to indignant protests against their cruel treatment by the Spaniards. There was much in common between Las Casas and Columbus. If Columbus, pressed down by the heavy responsibilities of office, recommended and consented to measures which were condemned by Las Casas, it must be remembered that the good bishop never himself felt the burden of responsibility. Columbus had

Pg-330

the same regard for the Indians and admiration for their simple life and good qualities, the same desire for their fair treatment, and felt the same indignation at the cruelty of Ovando, as was so loudly proclaimed by Las Casas. The bishop would not only have found a sympathising listener, but also an active supporter, in the Admiral. Columbus, on the whole, was fortunate in his historian, for Las Casas was a generous admirer of the Admiral's genius, as well as an excellent narrator of the events of his life. He also had the advantage of knowing the country, and of being able to describe the scenery. He thus supplied colouring to his narrative; and he never omitted to give the correct pronunciation of native names. But his greatest advantages were his personal acquaintance with Columbus, his brothers and sons, with Dr. Deza, with Vicente Pinzon, Ledesma, Ojeda, Diego Mendez, Vallejo, and Bastidas; and his access to the letters and other papers of Columbus. He gives thirty-one documents, seventeen of which are to be found nowhere else; and to him is due the preservation of the precious abstract of the journal of the first voyage, and the full report of the third voyage. Las Casas commenced his "Historia de las Indias" in 1527, when he was in Española, and worked at it during many years. Returning finally from the Indies in 1547, he took up his residence in the monastery of San Gregorio at Valladolid in 1550, and there he finished his book in 1561. He died at the great age of ninety-two, in 1566. This most important historical work remained in manuscript for more than three centuries after the death of its author. At length it was printed and published at Madrid, in five volumes in the year 1875.

Dr. Andres Bernaldez, the cura of Los Palacios from

1488 to 1513, and chaplain to Dr. Deza, Archbishop of Seville, received Columbus as his guest, when he returned to Spain in 1496. The good cura was intrusted with the care of several documents by the Admiral, and he had also seen the letter of Dr. Chanca, relating the events of the second voyage. Bernaldez was the author of the "Historia de los Reyes Catolicos," which, like the work of Las Casas, remained in manuscript for more than three centuries and a half. At length it was printed at Granada in 1856, and published, in two volumes 8vo, at Seville, in 1870. Bernaldez devotes thirteen chapters to Columbus, and the account of the second expedition, including the voyage during which Jamaica was discovered, is particularly valuable.

Gonzalo Fernandez Oviedo was born at Madrid in August 1478, and became a page to Prince Juan at the age of twelve. He must have been intimate with both the Admiral's sons during their life at court, and was present at the reception of Columbus at Barcelona in 1493. Shortly afterwards he went to Italy, and was secretary to Gonsalvo de Cordova. When Pedrarias was sent out as Governor of Darien in 1513, Oviedo accompanied him, and was, at different times, a Regidor of Darien, Governor of Cartagena, and Alcalde of the fort at San Domingo. Oviedo had a love for writing and recording events from his youth. He eventually became Chronicler to Charles V., and, in 1533, he was appointed Historiographer of the Indies. The "Historia General de las Indias," by Oviedo, is incomplete. It covers the period from 1492 to 1548. The early editions are rare, but the work was well edited by Don José Amador de los Rios, in 1851–55. Oviedo died at Valladolid in 1557. He had conversed with the sons of Colum-

Pg-332

lus, with Vicente Yanez Pinzon, Father Boil, Margarit, and Ovando. The work is valuable in many respects, though the author sympathises with his countrymen, and has no feelings for the sufferings of the natives. Moreover, he made more than one attempt to depreciate the Admiral's services by misrepresenting facts and dates. Las Casas denounces him for injustice and inaccuracy, and he was certainly prone to listen to gossip, without any sense of proportion in regard to the value of different classes of evidence. Yet we have to thank Oviedo for many details not to be found elsewhere, and, although he was the first to tell the fable about an old pilot dying in the house of Columbus, who told him the way to the Indies, yet he adds, "For me, I hold the story to be false."* Gomara and others copied the story from Oviedo, omitting his belief that it was an invention.

Pedro Martyr d'Anghiera was born at Arona in 1455, took orders, and came to Spain in 1487. He was chaplain to Queen Isabella, tutor to Prince Juan, and, in 1511, a member of the Council of the Indies. Martyr loved to retail the freshest news to friends in Italy; but, out of hundreds of letters written between 1488 and 1525, only a dozen relate to Columbus. The "Opus Epistolarum" appeared in 1530. His "De Orbe Novo," more generally known as the Decades, is in the form of more carefully prepared epistles to important correspondents in Italy, and was printed in 1511 and 1530. Although Pedro Martyr narrates events connected with several periods of the Admiral's active life, his letters contain little or nothing that may not be found elsewhere. The ancient letter-writer died at Valladolid in 1526.

There are two Spanish historians whose works were of

* "Para mi yo lo tengo por falso."

Pg-333

importance in studying the life of Columbus a century ago, but which have lost their value, owing to the authorities they relied upon having since become more accessible. Francisco Lopez de Gomara, who wrote a "Historia de las Indias," flourished a generation after the Admiral's time, and had great advantages in the collection of information. His narrative is agreeably written and well arranged, but he was an unconscientious writer, and his statements cannot safely be accepted unless they are corroborated by more reliable authorities. His treatment of the story about the pilot, who had been to the Indies, dying in the house of Columbus, is a good example of his method. It is given by Oviedo, with the important addition that he believed it to be false. Gomara copied the story from Oviedo, omitting his opinion that it was false, but admitting that the name of the pilot was unknown. Others copied from Gomara, until at last one of them invented a name. This is a good example of the way in which fables grow

Antonio de Herrera, the chronicler of the Indies, was born more than forty years after the Admiral's death He held the office of historiographer, with a good salary and access to all official documents, throughout the reign of Philip II., and until that of his grandson, Philip IV. He died in 1625, aged seventy-six. His great work, "Historia General de las Indias Occidentales," in eight decades, covers the period from 1492 to 1554 Its publication, in five folio volumes, was completed in 1615 Herrera's narrative is composed in strict chronological order, so that it is tedious and sometimes confusing Since the publication of Las Casas, the work of Herrera has ceased to be of any value as an authority for the life of Columbus, for that portion is copied from the bishop's

Pg - 334

history with scarcely any additions Neither Gomara nor Herrera were ever in the Indies

The enormous accumulation of materials for history in the receptacles for Spanish archives at Simancas and Seville, attracted the attention of Charles III., the best of the Bourbon kings of Spain. In 1781 he appointed the learned Juan Bautista Muñoz to investigate the sources of information, with free access to all the archives, and to found a more complete and authoritative history on them than had yet appeared. Muñoz collected a mass of documents with excellent judgment, and completed the first volume of his "Historia del Nuevo Mundo," which brings the narrative down to the landing of Bobadilla at San Domingo in 1500. Muñoz was a man endowed with great literary talent and almost inexhaustible power of work. He possessed critical insight of a very high order, and, through a maze of contradictory statements, discerned the correct date of the birth of Columbus, and his true landfall in the Bahamas It is a cause of deep regret that his untimely death, in 1799, in the midst of his labours, deprived the world of the remainder of his history.

Martin Fernandez de Navarrete, an accomplished naval officer, commenced his historical researches in 1789, and worked for some years in concert with Muñoz, both being assisted by the talented and industrious archivist Tomas Gonzalez. His labours were interrupted by the French war, but they were resumed at the peace, and extended over a period of thirty years In 1825 he published four volumes of the collection of voyages and travels made by the Spaniards at sea.* For the first time the

* "Coleccion de los Viages y Descubrimientos que hicieron por mar los Españoles," tom. i., ii., iii., iv (Madrid, 1825.)

actual texts of the Admiral's reports and letters became accessible. Navarrete collected them, with great labour and care, from the royal archives at Simancas, and, from the archives of the Dukes of Veragua and Infantado, had deciphered and arranged them, and edited them with admirable skill and judgment, together with numerous other documents throwing light on the great events comprised in the life-story of Columbus. Navarrete published a fifth volume in 1837. A French edition of the earlier volumes, with many valuable notes, appeared in 1828. Navarrete died in 1844. A few letters of Columbus have since been printed, two in a volume brought out by the Spanish Government in 1877, called "Cartas de Indias," one by Mr. Harrisse in his "Christophe Colomb." The materials published by Navarrete furnish by far the most important sources for the Admiral's life, as will be seen by the following brief abstract of the actual writings of Columbus himself, thus brought to light :—

First Voyage—

Letter to the Escribano de Racion (Santangel), 18th February 1493.

Abstract of the Journal; in the handwriting of Las Casas

Second Voyage—

Memorial to the Sovereigns, 30th January 1494.

Letter to the Sovereigns without date (in "Cartas de Indias").

Third Voyage—

Report in the handwriting of Las Casas.

Letter to Fonseca as to pay of Colonel and Carbajal, January 1498.

Deed of Entail, 24th February 1498.

Letter to Roldan, 20th October 1498

Safe-conduct for Roldan, 26th October 1498.

Letter to the Nurse of Prince Juan

Pg-336

Before Last Voyage—
- Letter to the Sovereigns, 1500.
- Letter to the Sovereigns, April 4, 1502
- Letter to the Sovereigns, February 6, 1502 (in "Cartas de Indias").
- Letter to Pope Alexander VI, February 1502.
- Letter to Oderigo, Genoese Ambassador, 21st March 1502
- Letter to the Bank of St George, 2nd April 1502
- Memorial for his son Diego
- Four letters to Father Gorricio

Last Voyage—
- Letter to the Sovereigns from Jamaica, 7th July 1503
- Fragment of a letter to Ovando, sent by Escobar.
- Letter at Beata, to Ovando

After Last Voyage—
- Eleven letters to his son Diego
- Letter to Oderigo, the Genoese Ambassador, 27th December 1504.
- Memorial to the King in favour of his son Diego, January 1505.
- Letter to the King, May 1506

Wills—
- Codicil written at Segovia, 1505
- Codicil at Valladolid, 1506

In Books
- Libro de las Profecias
- Marginal Notes in "Imago Mundi,"
- Marginal Notes in "Marco Polo"
- Marginal Notes in "Æneas Sylvius,"

} in the "Biblioteca Colombina" at Seville

The important publication of Navarrete enabled a satisfactory biography of Columbus to be written, which had not previously been possible. When Robertson wrote in 1777, his authorities were the Italian version of the memoir by Fernando, Peter Martyr, Oviedo, and Herrera. As soon as the work of Navarrete appeared, Washington Irving undertook to write a complete life of the illustrious discoverer of the New World. Born at New York in 1783, this charming author had passed some

P9-337

time in Spain, had visited Palos and La Rabida, and had had access to the manuscripts of Las Casas and Bernaldez. He must have completed his "Life of Columbus" within twelve months, for Navarrete's collection was published in 1825, and the preface of Washington Irving's book was dated 1827. The work was published by Murray in 1827; another edition in 1838, and was translated into Spanish by José García de Villalta. The "Vita di Cristoforo Colombo," by Luigi Bossi, appeared at Milan in 1818, but that author had not the advantage of access to the documents published by Navarrete. The life of Columbus by Washington Irving is as remarkable for careful research, and for the soundness of its judgments, as for the charm of its style. He has drawn a picture of the great Admiral which is based on a critical study of his character, and on a careful consideration of the varied motives which influenced his actions. It is a true and accurate portrait, showing the man's character as it really was, and it is not likely to be affected by later criticism. Irving's "Life of Columbus" will continue to be, as it has been in the past, the most popular and most widely read biography of the great Admiral for all English-speaking people. This most delightful of American authors died at Tarrytown in 1859.

For a critical examination of the numerous biographical and geographical questions involved in the life-story and discoveries of Columbus and his companions, all students are indebted to Humboldt's "Examen Critique de l'Histoire et de la Géographie du Nouveau Continent," which was published at Paris in 1836–39.

The French lives of Columbus, by the Marquis de Belloy and the Comte Roselly de Lorgues, are more

Pg-338

eulogistic than critical, and the works of the latter author were prepared mainly with the object of advocating the canonisation of the man who bore Christianity across the Atlantic to the New World. Roselly de Lorgues published his "Christophe Colomb" in 1864, and the "Histoire Posthume de Colomb" in 1885, which was answered by Captain Duro of the Spanish navy in his "Colon y la Historia Postuma." "Christophe Colomb," by Charles Buet, appeared in 1886.

Mr R H Major, the biographer of Prince Henry the Navigator, has the merit of having brought the principal writings of Columbus, in the work of Navarrete within reach of English readers by his excellent translations. His "Select Letters of Columbus" formed the volume printed for the Hakluyt Society in 1847, and the second edition appeared in 1870. The 1870 introduction is an admirable memoir on the life and discoveries of the Admiral, and contains the most closely reasoned argument that has been yet written, on the date of his birth. Mr. Major also made a careful study of the question of the landfall, and established the exact position off the south-east cape of Watling Island, where Columbus anchored. This excellent geographer and most amiable man, who was for so many years Keeper of the Maps at the British Museum and Secretary to the Royal Geographical Society, died in May 1891. The "Landfall of Columbus," by Admiral Becher, with whom Mr Major is in close agreement, was published in 1856. An official of the Hydrographer's Department in the English Admiralty, Becher, both by his occupation and his previous life at sea, had an excellent training for the work he undertook. His book is one of considerable merit, and he gives a translation of the abstract of the journal

P9-339

of the first voyage, which is not included in Major's volume His account of the life of Columbus, previous to the first voyage, is a translation from the work of the Baron de Bonnafoux

By far the most valuable and important researches relating to the life of Columbus, since the publication of Navarrete's work, are those which have been made during many years, by the eminent American author and critic Henry Harrisse. His magnificent work, entitled "Bibliotheca Americana Vetustissima," containing notices of the earliest books relating to the New World from 1492 to 1551, was published at New York in 1866, and Mr Harrisse had previously published translations of the letters of Columbus describing his first voyage, with the original texts. Mr. Harrisse has since published numerous treatises on various questions relating to the Admiral's life, and to the authenticity of the memoir attributed to Fernando, but his great work is the "Christophe Colomb" in two large volumes, published at Paris in 1884. It is based on medited documents in the archives of Genoa, Savona, Seville, and Madrid. It evinces immense research, and a critical faculty of a very high order. Aided by the recent researches of the Marchese Marcello Staglieno* and others in the notarial records of Genoa and Savona, Mr Harrisse has given a more complete and detailed view of the family of Columbus at Genoa, and of his early life, than has ever appeared before He has also established dates of the greatest importance, with reference to the birth and early movements of Columbus and his brothers. With the same elaboration and exhaustive research Mr. Harrisse has discussed the previously obscure questions relating

* Giornale Ligustino.

P9-340

to the marriage and life in Portugal, the transactions during the residence in Spain, and other disputed points, and has furnished new particulars respecting the lives of all the relations of the Admiral. In the course of inquiries extending over many years, and in the light of new discoveries, Mr. Harrisse has sometimes found it necessary to alter or modify previously formed opinions, but his knowledge of all subjects bearing on the life of the great Admiral is unrivalled, and the value of his researches places him in the very first rank as an authority. His labours, as regards the light they throw on the true history of Columbus and his discoveries, are second in value only to those of Navarrete

Mr Justin Winsor, the accomplished librarian of Harvard College, published a work entitled, "Christopher Columbus and how he received and imparted the Spirit of Discovery," in 1890. His extensive and accurate knowledge of literature, especially of the literature of the Columbian period in its relation to navigation and discovery, was sure to result in a valuable addition to the library of works on Columbus, for their number is now so great that the name of library is quite applicable In his early chapters, Mr Winsor exhaustively reviews the authorities for the Admiral's career, and he supplies the latest information respecting the family and early life at Genoa, giving full acknowledgments as to the value of Mr. Harrisse's assistance. His narrative of the discoveries is based on better-known authorities, and the work concludes with an interesting chapter on the geographical results, which very few scholars would have been competent to compile, and the value of which is enhanced by numerous illustrations. Mr Winsor's view of the character and motives of Columbus is not one which

Pg-341

is likely to recommend itself to critical students, for it ignores considerations without which a sound judgment cannot be formed But there can be no question of the value of his work as a comprehensive digest, as well of former knowledge as of the latest researches and discoveries

The Italian biographers of Columbus, from Spotorno to Staglieno, give the best information respecting the birth and early life of their illustrious compatriot Among other valuable memoirs, the Marchese Marcello Staglieno has published a most interesting pamphlet on the Admiral's early home—"Sulla casa abitata da Domenico Colombo" (Genova, 1885) Cornelio Desimoni is another eminent authority; while Guiseppe Pescia has very ably contended for his native parish, comprising Terrarossa, as the hero's birthplace. Peragallo has maintained the authenticity of the life by Fernando Columbus with considerable warmth, and the advocate Dondero, in his "L'Onesta di Cristoforo Colombo" (Genova, 1877), defends Columbus from the imputation of immorality in relation to Beatriz Enriquez The best Italian lives of Columbus are by Angelo Sanguineti (1846, 2nd ed 1891) and Francisco Tarducci (1885), the former being an excellent biography, critical, judicious, and very agreeably written

The most complete and, on the whole, the best life of the great Admiral that has yet appeared, was published at Barcelona in 1891, in view of the fourth centenary of the discovery of America on the 12th of October 1492 This is a monumental edition, with coloured illustrations from the works of the best modern Spanish artists, and with every page enriched by allegorical borders The type is clear, the engraving of head-pieces and vignettes

Pg-342

excellent, and the whole work reflects great credit on the typographical art of Barcelona. The accomplished author, Don José María Asensio, has bestowed years of research and of thought on the composition of a work which should do credit to his country, and he has been rewarded with complete success. The "Life of Columbus" by Asensio is, without doubt, the best and most complete that has yet appeared. Perfect master of his subject, acquainted alike with the older chronicles and the results of the latest researches, Asensio had the further advantage of writing at Seville, within a stone's throw of the "Biblioteca Colombina." In a pleasantly written narrative, he describes the events of the Admiral's life in full detail, discusses the points in dispute with critical insight and sagacity, and corrects several misconceptions of his predecessors. On the other hand he has adopted an untenable date for the birth of Columbus, and has reverted to the exploded theory that Cat Island was his landfall. He, however, furnishes an antidote to the latter mistake, by printing among the notes and illustrations, which conclude each division of his work, an admirably argued memoir on the true landfall by Don Juan Ignacio de Armas of Cuba. These comparatively unimportant errors are more than compensated for by the good sense and sound judgment with which all the various difficulties connected with the Admiral's life are approached and discussed. Asensio, while far from blind to the weaknesses and blemishes in the character of Columbus, fully appreciates his genius, his magnanimity, and the amiable qualities which so endeared him to his friends and relations. "Humanity," he says, "has placed his name on the highest column of the temple of immortality, and for close upon four centuries his

Pq - 343

memory has been exalted, praised, and loved by successive generations" The value of this splendid edition is very much enhanced by the number of original documents that are printed at the end of each book. They include the texts of nearly the whole of the letters and reports contained in Navarrete, besides many others, some of them being printed for the first time. Such a mass of documentary illustration necessarily swells the work to considerable dimensions, and the two large volumes of the "*Cristoval Colon, su vida, sus viajes, sus descubrimientos por Don José Maria Asensio*" comprise 1643 pages of letterpress This great work very aptly commemorates the celebration of the fourth centenary of the discovery of America, while it is not too much to say that it is an addition of permanent value to the literature of Europe.

Several other cultured Spaniards have devoted their time and abilities to the study of portions of the life-story of Columbus within the last few years Tomas Rodriguez Pinilla, in his "Colon en España" (Madrid, 1884), has very ably explained the true nature of the conferences at Salamanca in the winter of 1486-87, at which Columbus assisted, and the accomplished naval captain, Don Cesareo Fernandez Duro, in his "Colon y Pinzon," and in several parts of the volumes entitled "Disquisiciones Nauticas," has thrown light on various questions relating to the life of the great Admiral All Spaniards and Italians unite to do honour to the memory of the illustrious Genoese navigator, and their feeling of veneration and love receives an answer of warm sympathy from every nation throughout the world.

Pg-344

CHAPTER XVIII.

AMERIGO VESPUCCI AND THE NAME OF AMERICA.

It is the strangest accident in the history of geographical discovery that the great continent discovered by Columbus should not have received his name, nor even the name of any other discoverer, but that it should for ever be known by the Christian name of a provision merchant whose short experience of the sea began in advanced middle life, and who never even commanded an expedition of discovery.

Amerigo Vespucci came of a respectable Florentine family, and was born on the 9th of March 1451. He was brought up to mercantile pursuits in the house of the Medici, and came to Spain at the age of forty. There he obtained employment in the commercial house of the Italian Juanoto Berardi at Seville, whose business was to contract for equipping and provisioning ships. Berardi died in December 1495, and Vespucci had to complete the engagements of his deceased employer. He was the contractor for the ships of the second and third voyages of Columbus. The learned Muñoz examined the official records of expenses incurred in fitting out the vessels. They show that Vespucci was at Seville or San Lucar from April 1497 to the end of May 1498. The Admiral always found him civil and obliging, but his meat soon turned bad, and his biscuits appear to have been

Pg. 345

abominable In 1499 Vespucci went to sea for the first time at the age of forty-seven—much too old ever to make a sailor He was on board one of the vessels of Ojeda's expedition, probably in the capacity of a merchant or volunteer He returned in 1500, and went to Portugal in the following year His own account was that he proceeded to Lisbon at the invitation of the king, conveyed to him through a countryman named Giuliano Giocondo It would seem, from his conversation with Columbus afterwards, that the object of his journey was to make money, and that he failed After four years, Vespucci returned to Spain and visited Columbus at Seville in 1505, on his way to court In a letter to his son Diego, dated February 5, 1505, the Admiral wrote —

"Diego Mendez left Seville on the third of this month After his departure I spoke with Amerigo Vespucci, the bearer of this letter, who is on his way to court on matters relating to navigation. He always showed a desire to please me, and he is a very respectable man. Fortune has been adverse to him, as to many others, and his labours have not been so profitable as he might reasonably have expected. He goes for me, and is very desirous of doing anything that would be useful to me, and he is in your hands. He sets out with the determination to do all that he possibly can for me See in what way he can be of service, and work for him, as he will tell you all"

In the same year Vespucci returned to his old trade, and again obtained a contract to supply provisions for ships On March 22, 1508, he was appointed Pilot-Major of Spain He was a very clever, plausible man, and he must have picked up some knowledge of a pilot's duties Still this was a strange selection, with such tried and ex-

Pg-346

perienced men as Pinzon, Solis, and Cosa ready to serve. But appointments made without reference to qualifications were characteristic of Fonseca, and indeed of Ferdinand. Vespucci never went to sea until he was forty-seven, and had since made three voyages at the outside.* A pilot should have learnt his business from his youth afloat and at sea. Vespucci was a landsman, and no true pilot. This is all that is certainly known of him, apart from his own letters. He died on February 22, 1512.

Vespucci wrote a letter from Lisbon, dated September 4, 1504, to his schoolfellow Piero Soderini, who was Gonfaloniere of Florence in 1504, describing four voyages which he alleged that he had made, two with Spaniards and two with Portuguese. He also wrote a letter to Lorenzo di Pier Francesco di Medici in March 1503, describing the third of these voyages along the coast of Brazil. Except in the case of Coelho, the names of the commanders of expeditions in which Vespucci claimed to have served, are carelessly, or perhaps carefully, omitted.

Vespucci stated that his first voyage was undertaken by order of King Ferdinand, and that it occupied from May 10, 1497, to October 15 1498. His story is that he sailed to the Canaries with four vessels, and thence steered west and south, making a thousand leagues, when a landfall was made in latitude 16° N. He saw a village, with long houses built out over the sea on piles, like a little Venice. He next came to a place, in 23° N., called *Paria* in the Latin, and *Lariab* in the earliest known Italian edition. Thence he sailed 870 leagues

* His supposed voyage with Juan de la Cosa in 1506, referred to in the letter of Vianello, is not possible. There is proof that Vespucci was in Spain up to the end of August 1506, and the letter is dated December of the same year.

Pg- 347

north, and came to the finest harbour in the world. There was an island called *Iti* inhabited by cannibal savages, a hundred leagues from the coast. Here the Spaniards captured 222 slaves, and took them to Cadiz, where they arrived in October 1498.

No such voyage was undertaken in 1497, and Vespucci was employed as a provision contractor during the alleged period of the absence of the ships. As the chief events in Vespucci's story also happened in the voyage of Ojeda, it was naturally suspected that the story of this imaginary voyage was concocted from incidents which really occurred during the voyage made by Vespucci under the command of Ojeda in 1499–1500. There was the village called Little Venice by Ojeda. There was the finest harbour in the world, being Ojeda's idea of the Gulf of Caraico. There was an encounter with natives, in which exactly the same number of Spaniards were killed and wounded as in the encounter during Ojeda's voyage.* There was the attack on islanders and the capture of over 200 slaves, which was the last event of the voyage of Ojeda. Vespucci merely altered the latitudes, and made such a gross blunder respecting the difference between his dead reckoning and the observed position of his landfall (over 900 miles!) that this alone stamps his tale as apocryphal. He also added the impossible additional voyage northwards for 870 leagues, which would have taken him overland to British Columbia.

Humboldt, unwilling to believe in a fraud with regard to the four voyages of Vespucci, and aware of the evidence that he was in Spain during 1497 and 1498, suggested an explanation. It was that the dates were the results of clerical and typographical errors; that the voyage of Ojeda

* Las Casas, i 392.

Pg- 348

may have been the first voyage of Vespucci; that the Florentine provision dealer left Ojeda at Española and got back to Spain in time to go out with Pinzon in 1500, and that the voyage with Pinzon was his second voyage. But no one was allowed to leave Ojeda's ships at Española.

Varnhagen took a bolder course in his attempt to rehabilitate Vespucci. Entirely ignoring the evidence that he was in Spain all the time, the Brazilian advocate adopts the story of his client *au grand sérieux*. His landfall in latitude 16° would have taken him to Honduras if his run of less than 1000 leagues had not landed him at the eastern end of Española. Varnhagen passes over this somewhat serious obstacle, and takes Vespucci to Honduras, suggesting a "little Venice" for him on the coast of Tabasco. Vespucci gives a second latitude of 23°, which takes him to Tampico, on the Gulf of Mexico: and assuming that *Lariab* was the form in which the name was originally written by Vespucci, it appears that, although there is no such name, yet the Huastecs Indians round Tampico have names of places ending in *ab*. But it is quite impossible to tell whether *Parias* or *Lariab*, or either, was the word in the original manuscript. Varnhagen is unable to follow his client for 870 leagues northwards overland from 23° N., so he makes him steer in a different direction. By this means Varnhagen takes Vespucci along the coast of America, round Florida, and as far as Cape Hatteras, discovering nearly 3000 miles of new coast-line. The finest harbour in the world is not in that neighbourhood; but *Iti*, where there were cannibals, and where Vespucci alleged that he carried off 222 slaves, is identified with Bermuda. It is well known that Bermuda was uninhabited before the arrival of Europeans but that fact is set aside to make the theory complete.

Pg - 349

It was, however, necessary to find an expedition with which Vespucci could embark in 1497, for he did not pretend that he commanded one His admirers have suggested that he sailed in the expedition of Pinzon and Solis to Yucatan; but it has already been shown that this theory is quite untenable.*

Pinzon and Solis were alive when the lawsuit was in progress between Diego Columbus and the Crown The Crown prosecutor exerted himself to collect proofs that some of the discoveries were not made by the Admiral but by other navigators If Vespucci had been in an expedition which discovered thousands of miles of coast-line between Honduras and Cape Hatteras, a report must have been made to the king and that report would inevitably have been produced at the trial Pinzon and Solis, too, must have given evidence. But there is not a word about it No such discoveries are shown in the map of Juan de la Cosa (1500), who was intimate with Pinzon and Vespucci Peter Martyr was intimate with Vespucci and his nephew, yet there is no sign of the discoveries suggested by Varnhagen, on the map drawn for the *Decades*, which appeared in 1511. At least one copy of Vespucci's story, which was printed in 1507, had reached Spain in 1515 namely, that in the library of Fernando Columbus. If the first voyage had not been known to be a fabrication, it would have been eagerly brought forward as evidence at the trial against the Admiral But it is not mentioned. Ponce de Leon obtained a concession to discover this very coast in 1511, on condition that it had not been discovered before. It is incredible that Pinzon, Solis, and Vespucci would still

* See note at end of Chapter XIV

Pg-350

have kept silence without any conceivable reason. Moreover, it would have been officially known that the coast referred to by Ponce de Leon had already been explored. The inevitable conclusion is that no such discovery was ever made, and that there was no expedition with which Vespucci could have sailed in 1497. Even if there had been, it does not follow that he was in it. The evidence that he was then working as a contractor at Seville stands in the way.

On these grounds the alleged first voyage of Vespucci must be pronounced to have been apocryphal. Respecting the second voyage with Ojeda there is no doubt. Ojeda gave evidence, in the lawsuit of Diego Columbus, to the effect that he took with him "Juan de la Cosa the pilot, Morigo Vespuche, and other pilots." In this sentence the words "other pilots" are to be coupled with the pilot Juan de la Cosa, not with "Morigo Vespuche." For Vespucci went to sea at the age of forty-seven for the first time, and cannot therefore have been a pilot. He may have possessed some theoretical knowledge of astronomy, but this would not constitute a pilot, who must have learnt his business afloat and at sea. It is, therefore, very unjust on the part of those writers who try to rehabilitate Vespucci, to speak of him as the chief pilot and director in any expedition in which he is alleged to have served. The whole credit of any discovery belongs to Pinzon, Solis, Ojeda, Coelho, or whoever the theory places in command, not to the Florentine merchant. Vespucci was a landsman, and had no experience as a sailor, much less as a pilot, before he sailed with Ojeda.

The evidence against the first voyage throws doubt on the two which Vespucci asserted that he made from

P9-351

Lisbon. The Viscount de Santarem searched all the Portuguese records in the Torre do Tumbo, from 1495 to 1503, and the name of Vespucci does not once occur. This makes it very improbable that he was ever in command of a Portuguese vessel But it does not preclude his having sailed in one in some subordinate capacity Moreover, while his first voyage must be condemned as unreal from internal evidence alone, there is much in the account of his third voyage which bears the stamp of having been written by an eye-witness Peter Martyr had heard that the Florentine contractor made one voyage with the Portuguese.

In the letter to Medici, describing the Portuguese voyage of 1501, Vespucci spoke of the Brazilian coast as "novum mundum appellare licet." This letter hence received the heading of *Novus Mundus.** It was first published in Latin at Paris in 1503, then in German at Augsburg in 1504, at Dresden and Strassburg in 1505. It next appeared at Vicenza in 1507, in the book called "Paesi novamente Retrovati," and went through several other editions.

But it was owing to the publication of the letter to Soderini, describing the four voyages, that the name AMERICA was first suggested. A copy of this letter in French was sent to René II, Duke of Lorraine, from Lisbon. It was translated into Latin by Jean Basin de Sandacourt, a canon of a small cathedral town of Lorraine called St. Dié, at the request of another canon of St. Die named Walter Lud, who was also the Duke's secretary Lud had founded a college at St. Dié under the auspices

* It has been erroneously supposed that the expression "New World" was first used by Vespucci. It was used by Columbus himself in his letter to the nurse of Prince Juan.

Pg-352

of Duke René, and had even established a printing-press, appointing a youth named Ringmann (called Philesius) as corrector of proofs and teacher of Latin. Walter Waldseemuller (called Hylacomylus) came to St. Dié in 1504, as teacher of geography.

Walter Lud wrote a little book of four leaves, entitled "Speculi Orbis Declaratio, which was printed at Strassburg. It is a work of extreme rarity, but there is a copy in the British Museum. It is from this little book that we learn that the letters of Vespucci were sent from Portugal to the Duke of Lorraine in French, and translated into Latin by Sandacourt. In April 1507 Waldseemuller (or Hylacomylus) produced, from the St Dié printing-press, a little work entitled "Cosmographiæ Introductio," to which was appended the Latin version of the four voyages of Vespucci. It was in this little book that the first suggestion of the name of America appeared. Waldseemuller wrote:—

"And the fourth part of the world having been discovered by Americus, may well be called Amerige, which is as much as to say the land of Americus or America."

In another place, a few pages on, the suggestion is more fully stated as follows:—

Nũc ỹo & hę partes ſunt latius luſtratæ/& alia quarta pars per Americũ Veſputiũ(vt in ſequenti bus audietur)inuenta eſt/quã non video cur quis iure vetet ab Americo inuentore ſagacis ingenꝝ vi ro Amerigen quaſi Americi terrã / ſiue Americam dicendã:cũ & Europa & Aſia a mulieribus ſua ſor tita ſint nomina. Eius ſitũ & genus mores ex bis bi nis Americi nauigationibus quæ ſequunt liquide intelligi datur.

Ameri ca

FACSIMILE FROM THE "COSMOGRAPHIÆ INTRODUCTIO."

P9-353

"But now these parts are more extensively explored, and, as will be seen in the following letters, another fourth part has been discovered by Americus Vespucius, which I see no just reason why any one should forbid to be named Amerige, which is as much as to say the land of Americus or America, from its discoverer Americus,

PORTION OF THE HAUSLAB GLOBE.

who is a man of shrewd intellect; for Europe and Asia have both of them taken a feminine form of name from the names of women."

A new edition of the "Cosmographiæ Introductio" appeared in September 1507, and another at Strassburg, in 1509. A copy of the Strassburg edition was in the

library of Fernando Columbus, who probably looked upon the proposal to give the name of America as intended to apply only to part of the coast of Brazil discovered by the Portuguese in 1502. In the Pomponius Mela of 1518 there is a letter dated Vienna, 1512, in which the expression occurs "America, discovered by Vesputius." It has recently been shown* that Waldseemuller made a map of the world and a globe in 1507, when he wrote the "Cosmographiæ Introductio" The map has not been found, but the globe is that formerly the property of General Hauslab, and is given by Gallois. Upon it the name of America is inscribed. This is the first time that the name appeared on a map. In 1509, the name was placed on a manuscript map now at Vienna In 1511, the following passage appeared in an English play, called "The New Interlude":

> "But this newe lande founde lately,
> Ben cally'd America by cause only
> Americus dyd hist them find."†

In 1515, the name America appeared on Schoner's globe, and on the gores at Windsor Castle, which were attributed by Mr. Major to Lionardo da Vinci. The earliest engraved map bearing the name of America is the map of the world by Peter Apianus, in an edition of Solinus of 1520. The name was placed along the coast of what the Spaniards called Tierra Firme. It was first applied to the whole continent by Mercator in 1540.

America was a convenient and euphonious word, and was gradually adopted by map-makers throughout Europe, but it was long before this inappropriate and

* Gallois. *Les cosmographes allemands de la renaissance* Paris, 1890.
† Quoted by Harrisse.

Pq - 355

intruding name took root in Spain. Las Casas declared that the continent ought to be called Columba, and Herrera also raised a protest. But habit and the map makers eventually overcame justice, even in Spain, although the continent of Columbus was there always officially known as the Indies.

René II., Duke of Lorraine, died in December 1508. The printing-press at St. Dié was broken up, and the little knot of professors was dispersed It would seem that Waldseemuller afterwards became better informed, when he was engaged on the Ptolemy of 1513. It contains a map on which there is no name of America, but on the new continent there is the following inscription :—"Hæc terra, cum adjacentibus insulis, inventa est per Columbum Januensem, ex mandatis Regis Castilliæ" It was too late The mischievous suggestion in the "Cosmographiæ Introductio" had taken root, and rapidly bore fruit

There is no reason for supposing that Vespucci himself connived at the suggestion of the name America, and it is most probable that he never heard of it. Vespucci merely wrote his romance for the admiration of his friends at Florence, seeking for credit at home by magnifying his exploits, as many another has done before and since He can have had no other object, nor could he have foreseen the notoriety his letters acquired. Nevertheless America is now the name of the great continent discovered by Columbus

The Admiral's name is confined to a few localities. The country of Veragua, all the coast thence to Cabo de la Vela, and a great inland territory, comprise the United States of Columbia. The city at the Atlantic terminus of the Panama railway, where the Admiral hoped to find a strait, is the city of Colon. British

Pg- 356

Columbia is an extensive province in North America, and the capital of the United States is situated in the territory of Columbia, but the name of the whole continent was filched from its great discoverer.

That name has a securer abiding-place. Monuments and columns at Genoa, Madrid, Barcelona, at Mexico and other Spanish-American towns, are the outward evidence of the firm hold that the mighty achievement of the Admiral has taken on the imagination of mankind. The love and reverence that is universally felt for his noble character will be manifested by the enthusiastic celebration of the fourth centenary of the discovery of the New World, and the story of his life will continue to be studied by generations yet unborn. For it teaches many a lesson of devotion to duty, of perseverance, of loyalty, and of faith. The great work of his life has long been completed, but his example will remain for ever to incite the youths of each succeeding generation to emulate his example, and to impress upon them the qualities which enable men to rise from the humblest rank of life to the height of worldly ambition. The name of a new continent is a small thing compared with the enthusiastic veneration with which the civilised world, for ages to come, will treat the name of Christopher Columbus, the weaver of Genoa and Admiral of the Ocean Sea.

PAGE. 357

INDEX.

ABACO, one of the Bahamas, the 1 *octagonique* of the Herrera map, 92
Acevedo, Pedro de, page on board the *Santa Maria*, 70.
Acklin Island, one of the Bahamas, 96
Acosta, his repetition of the pilot fable, 37
Açul, Bahia de, in Española, 115
Adamanaz Island (see Samana)
Adelantado, title given to Bartolomè Columbus, 173 confirmed, 183 (see Columbus, Bartolomè)
Admiral, Columbus created, 59 (see Columbus, Christopher)
Adorno Prospero, Doge of Venice, 8
—— Raffaele, Doge when Columbus was born, 5
Affonso V of Portugal, map constructed for, 18
—— Prince, marriage with daughter of Queen Isabella, 53
Africa, discoveries of Prince Henry, 18, voyages of Columbus on coast of, 22, 33 (see Guinea Slave Trade)
Aguado, Juan de, his mission to Española, 178, return to Spain, 179; discredited, 183
Aguilera, graduate of Salamanca, treatise on the astrolabe, 47
Aguja, Point 190
Alamo, Cristoval de, of Niebla, seaman in the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70.
Alard of Winchelsea (see Tallarte)
Alcatraz, a bird (booby) seen in the Atlantic, 77
Alexander VI, his Bull, 137, 233 324
Alfraganus on the length of a degree, 34, his works taught at Salamanca, 47
Alhambra, the Court at, 202 Columbus received at, 210 (see Cordova)
Alonzo, Maestre, of Moguer, surgeon of the *Santa Maria*, 69
Alta Vela, rock off south coast of Española, 168
Alva Duke of, uncle of the wife of Diego Columbus, 306.
Alvarado, Pedro de, with Grijalva, 317
Amalfi (see Gioja)
Amana, on the Herrera map of the Bahamas, same as *Caicos*, 92
Amazons, mouth of, discovered by Pinzon, 242
Ambrosian Library at Milan, copy of the first printed edition of the letters of Columbus at, 132
America, name proposed by Waldseemüller, 352; first appeared on the Hamlah globe, 351, protests of Las Casas and Herrera against the name, 355
Anacaona, sister of Behechio, and wife of Coanabo, 172, 176, friendly intercourse with Bartolomè Columbus, 193, 194, murdered by Ovando, 275, 281, 287
Ancona, Portolan drawn at, 9
Andagoya, Pascual de, came to the Indies with Pedrarias, 316
Andrea San, gate of, at Genoa, 3, 6
Anne de Beaujeu, Regent of France, 146
Antigua Island, discovered, 152
Antigua, caravel, in Bobadilla's squadron, 204
Antilla, fabulous island in the Atlantic, 9, 20 distance from Zipangu, according to Toscanelli, 32, 73; looked out for by Columbus, 77, 79
Antilles name of West Indies, first appeared on the Cantino map, 248
Antonio of Jaen, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Apanus, name of America on the map of, 354.
Aracena Mountains crossed by Columbus, 39
Arana family, 39.
—— Beatriz, Enriquez de, her love for Columbus, 50 (see Enriquez)
—— Diego de, friend of Columbus, 50, 60, in the first voyage, 69, in command at Navidad, 117, 118, killed by Coanabo, 175
—— Pedro de, 50, 61 captain of a ship in the second voyage, 144, 187
Aranda, Francisco de seaman in the *Santa Maria* left at Navidad, 70
Arcos, Pedro de, seaman of the *Pinta*, 71
Arenas, Islas de, same as Ragged Isles, 86, 93, Lieut Murdoch's calculation, 101, 102

Aristazabal, Admiral, removed the body of Columbus to Havana 292
Armas, Don Juan de, his paper on the landfall, 98
Arms of Columbus, grant of 138
Arzilla, Portuguese attacked, and offered by Columbus, 251
Asensio, Don José María, on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, 61, 62, 70, believes Cat Island to be the landfall, 91, proved that the letter from Columbus to Santangel was printed at Seville, 132, letter to Toscanelli, 147, plant from the garden of Fernando Columbus in garden of, 325, notice of his great work on Columbus, 341, 342
Astrolabe, treatise on, by Andalone di Negro, 9, adaptation for use at sea, 28, method of observing, 29, treatise on, by Aguilera 47; for the first voyage, 73
Asuncion (see Toba)
Atienza, Blas de, one of the first to reach the south sea 315
Atlantic, fabulous isles of, 9, 20, 91 navigation of Columbus across, 74–80, birds 77 (see Gulf Stream)
Atrato river, boundary between the territories of Ojeda and Nicuesa, 310
Attwood City (see Samana)
Aurens Chersonesus, supposed to be Cuba, 166, 262
Ayala, Juan de, in command of Fort Conception 174
—— Pedro de, Spanish ambassador in London, on second voyage of Cabot, 230, 249
Aza, native name of Guadalupe, 151
Azores discovered by the Genoese 18 31, shown on the Laurentian map, 18 line of no variation at Flores, 76 position of Sargasso Sea near, 78, Columbus at, 125
Azua, Columbus took refuge from the hurricane at 253

BAHAMAS Island reported to contain gold, 112
Baccalaos name for Newfoundland, 231, origin of the word, 232.
Bacon, Roger, knew the properties of the loadstone, 28 largely quoted by D'Ailly, 30
Bahamas (see Guanahani) boatswain bird breeds in, 77 shown on La Cosa chart, 90, and on Herreras map, 91, position of Guanahani in the group, 91 requirements for the island which was the landfall, 92, 93 names from the buccaneers, 99, kidnapping by Ojeda 290 kidnapping by Ovando 287, 300
Balboa, Vasco Nuñez de, with Bastidas, 311 (see Vasco Nuñez)
Ballena, Golfo de la, 100
Ballester, Miguel, governor of Fort Conception 176
Bank (see St George)
Baraona, Gabriel, of Belmonte, seaman of the *Santa Maria* left at Navidad, 70
Barbi, Juan, gunner of the *Capitana*, joined the mutiny of Porras at Jamaica, 270, killed, 280
Barco, Juan del, of Avila, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Barcelona, reception of Columbus at, by the sovereigns, 134 135, 136, monument to Columbus at, 356
Basque fishermen at Newfoundland, 232
Bastidas, Rodrigo de, expedition and discoveries of, 243 244 247, Admiral's discoveries connected with those of 258, evidence as to the voyage of Pinzon and Solis, 285.
Bautello, Giacomo married Blanchinetta Colombo 12 acquired the house of Domenico Colombo 13
—— Pantalcone, 12, 61
Bayona, the *Pinta* at, 127 Niño arrived at, 241
Baza, siege of, 53
Beaujeu, Anne de, Regent of France, Bartolomé Columbus at court of, 52
Beccadelli, Antonio ("Il Panormita"), on the compass, 38.
Becher, Admiral, theory of the landfall, 98 his mistake about the second island, 100, 101; his work on the landfall, 338
Behaim, Martin, account of 25, his adaptation of the astrolabe for use at sea 26, 27, description of his globe, 72, 73
Behechio, chief of Xaragua in Española, 172 intercourse with Bartolomé Columbus 103 tribute paid by, 195
Belalcazar, Seb. de, conqueror of Quito, 310.
Belem river, arrival of Columbus at, 259, settlement formed, 262, abandoned, 267
Bellas, Marquis de, Life of Columbus, 337
Beneventanus on Ruysch, 233
Benincasa, Grazioso, of Ancona, draughtsman at Genoa 9, 20, 29
Benzoni, his disbelief of the pilot fable, 37, history of Columbus and the egg, 139 n
Berardi, Donato, provision contractor at Seville, 180 344
Bermeo, Domingo de, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Bermejo, Juan Rodriguez, in the *Pinta*, 71, 87
Bermuda, discovery of, 71; boatswain bird breeds at, 77, the place called "Bermudas" by Vespucci supposed to be, 318
Bermudez, Juan, discoverer of Bermuda, 71
—— Rodrigo de Triana, in the *Pinta*, 71, reported land in sight, 81, 87
—— Diego, seaman of the *Pinta*, 71
Bernal, surgeon in the last voyage of Columbus 254 intended mutiny of, 278
Bernaldez, Dr Andres, Cura of Palacios, on the age of Columbus 13; his statement that Columbus cried a living by the sale of books 41, he obtained information from Dr Chanca, 143, received Columbus as his guest, 181, 182 papers of Columbus left with 182 notice of 280, 300, his chapters relating to Columbus, 341
Bianco, Andrea, draughtsman, helped to

draw the Fra Mauro map, 18; Antilia on his map, 20.
Bibliotecа Colombina, 327
Bilbao, Pedro, of Larrabezua, seaman on board the *Santa Maria*, 70.
Bird Rock, 102
Birds in the Atlantic, 77
Biscayno, Val di, customs of the people, 3.
Blaeu gave the name of San Salvador to Cat Island in his atlas, 94
Blewfields, site of, passed by Columbus, 257
Boatswain bird (see Rabia de Junco)
Bobadilla, Beatriz (see Moya, Marquesa de)
—— Francisco, appointed to supersede Columbus, 203, his character, 204, arrival at San Domingo, 204, outrageous conduct, puts Columbus in chains, 205, his folly and insolence, 206, 209, his recall, 212, to be sent home, 212, 252, his ill-usage of Bastidas, 244, retributive end, 254
Boca (see Dragon, Sierpe).
Bohio, news of an island so called, 86
Bol, Fray Bernardo, of Montserrat, first priest in the Indies, 143, in the second voyage, 149, member of the commission of government at Isabella, 158, 161, Montserrat named from his monastery, 152; his truculent advice respecting Guacanagari, 154, performed the first mass at Isabella, 155, his misconduct at Isabella, 160, 170, his mutiny and return to Spain, 162; misstatements of, exposed, 177
Bojador, Cape, 19
Bondi, Antonio, neighbour of Domenico Colombo at Genoa, 4
Booby (see Alcatraz)
Bossi, Luigi, his Life of Columbus, 237.
Bracelli Genoese historian, 8
Brasil or Brazil, fabulous island in the Atlantic, 9, 20, 21, English expedition in search of, 20, shown on Behaim's globe, 73
Brazilian coast visited by Cabral, 184, discovered by Pinzon, 242, voyage of Lepe along, 243; alleged voyages of Vespucci on, 354
Bristol, expedition from, in search of Brasil, 20, trade with Iceland, 22, John Cabot settled at, 227
Briviesca, Jimeno de, a creature of Fonseca, kicked by the Admiral, 185
Buccaneers, names of, given to islands of the Bahamas, 99
Buenaventura, Juan de, put on shore by Bastidas and found by Ojeda, 245
Buena Vista, one of the Cape Verde Islands, Columbus at, in his third voyage out, 188
Bueno (Puerto), in Jamaica, 165, 270
Burgos, reception of Columbus at, by the sovereigns, 182

CABOT, JOHN, notice of, 226; scheme for a voyage in imitation of Columbus, 227, settled at Bristol, 227, first voyage of, 227, 228, 229, second voyage, 229, 230, fate unknown, 230 f
Cabot, Lewis, 227
—— Sancius, 227.
—— Sebastian, 227; discovery of his map, 227 *n*, probably with his father settled at Bristol, 229, employment in Spain, letters and conversations, 231, return to England and death, 233
Cabezudo, Juan Rodriguez, lent a mule to Father Perez to go to the Queen at Granada, 55
Cabral, Pedro Alvarez, on the Brazilian coast, 184.
Cabrera, Don Andres, friendly to Columbus, 48
Cabron, Cape in Española, 195
Cademartori, Luchino, Giacomo Colombo apprenticed to, 13
Cadena, in the Bahamas, 95.
Cadiz, ships for the second voyage fitted out at, 141, 148, sons of the Admiral at, 146, return of Columbus to, 181; arrival of the Admiral in chains, 210, sailing of Ojeda from, 239, and return, 240, Bastidas sailed from, 243, second expedition of Ojeda, 244, Columbus sailed from, on the last voyage, 252
Caicos Island, second island of Navarette, 92, 94, 97
Calabria, John of, expedition to Naples, 7.
Calamar Ojeda landed at, 310.
Calms, region of intense heat, 188.
Calzadilla, Dr, Bishop of Viseu, scheme of Columbus referred to, 35
Caniba Isle, 92
Cano, Sebastian del, first circumnavigation, 317
Canoe at Guanahani, 82, in Española, 114, at Jamaica, their size, 165, great trading canoe on the Honduras coast, 255, voyage of Mendez in, 272, 274
Cami, reported name of a king in Cuba, 109
Canaria, the word *Stamaria* mistaken for, in copying a letter of Columbus, 131
Canary Isles, rediscovery by Genoese, 17; Columbus steered for, on leaving Palos, 74, 76
Canary, Grand, fleet of Columbus at, 74, 252
Cantino, Alberto, his letter to the Duke of Ferrara on the voyages of Cortereal, 235, map of the discoveries of Cortereal drawn at Lisbon for, 236, account of map, 237, 238, 247 248.
Cape Breton, the *Prima Terra Vista* of Cabot, 228, 229; Cortereal at, 235, 238.
Cape of Good Hope, discovery, 52, 77
Cape Verde Isles, 18, 28; Columbus at, 32, Sargossa Sea near, 78, Columbus at, in third voyage, 188, Papal meridian measured from, 233; Pinzon at, 241
Capitana, the Admiral's ship in the last voyage, 250, 254, 255, lost her foremast, 260, 267.
Capraria, fabulous isle of the Atlantic, 21.
Caravels (see *Pinta, Niña*)
Carbacho, Pedro, of Caceres, seaman of *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70

Carbajal, Alonzo Sanchez de, of Baeza
member of a commission of govern
ment at Isabella, 101, sent to Españ
ola from Gomera, 187, copy of docu
ments of Columbus intrusted to, 217
deceived by Roldan 197 agent of
Columbus in Española 224 251, 254
went to court from Seville, 288
—— Dr Bernaldo, Bishop of Cartagena
sent to Rome with news of the discovery
of Columbus, 137
Careta, chief of Cueva, in Darien, 314,
315
Caribato, province in Española 118
Caribiri, south of the Nicaragua River,
257
Caribs, 118 121, 122 150, 151, islands of,
153 to be sold as slaves, 156 origin
doubtful, 171
Cartagena, bishop of (see Carbajal)
Carthusian monastery at Seville (see
Santa Maria de las Cuevas)
Casaneuva, name of a corsair under whom
Columbus is erroneously said to have
served, 16
Casas (see Las Casas)
Castagneti, Bartolomeo, apprentice of
Domenico Colombo 11
Castañeda Juan, Portuguese governor of
Santa Maria, his philosophic duty 125 126
Castellano, Dr Diego Ortiz, Bishop of
Cuba, scheme of Columbus referred to,
35, his pernicious advice, 35
Castillo del Oro, 310
Castillo, silversmith of Seville, on board
the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad 70
Cat Island, the *Guanahani* of Herrera's
map 92 the landfall according to W
Irving's theory 94, called San Salvador
in the atlas of Blaeu, 94, unlike Guana
hani, 95, 105
Catalan chart of 1375, Brazil shown on,
20
Catay in the letter of Toscanelli, 31, 73
Catoche Cape, 317
Cauchieto Nino al, 231
Cavinas, Honduras, 255
Cayamas, 260
Cayo Moa, in Cuba, 113, new mast for
Niña at, 113
Ceuta Bishop of (see Castellano)
Cayre native name of Dominica 151
Charlevoix (see D Anville)
Chanca, Dr Diego Alvarez in the second
voyage with Columbus, account of, 143,
149 151, his letter to the Chapter of
Seville 157
Charles V, friend of the sons of Colum
bus, 318, 324
Chaucer on the astrolabe, 29
Chepes Darien chief, Ally of Vasco
Nuñez 315
Chios visited by Columbus, 8, mastich
of 112
Chiriqui, 259
Cibao, gold in 115 117, 155 mountains
of, reached by Ojeda 155 expedition
to 158, ascent of mountains of, 160
Cifuentes, Count of, received Columbus
at Seville, 133
Cigateo (see Lucayos)
Cigney, district in Española flight of
Guarionex to Myobanex, chief of 195
Cipango in the letter of Toscanelli, 32,
distance from Antilla, 32, 115
Circumference of the earth, various mea
surements 34
Ciruelo, Pedro, of Salmanca, on Sacro
bosco, 17
Cisneros, Cardinal Ximenes de, friendly
to Columbus, 280 300, 303, 324
Citrania, 245
Clarence Harbour, in Long Island (Ba
hamas), 104 105
Codera, Cape, 230 245
Coiba, chief of, ally of Vasco Nuñez, 314
Colmenares, Rodrigo de, lieutenant of
Nicuesa, 310, at Darien, 312
Colombo, Anachetto, 3
—— Antonio, at Quinto 2
—— Bartolomeo, the Adelantado, his
birth 5, companion of his brother in
his studies, 10 went to Lisbon, 12,
remained at Lisbon when his brother
went to Spain 36, 51 went to England,
51 account of, by Las Casas, 51 in
London 52 question of his having
sailed with Bartholomew Diaz, 62 sent
for to join the Admiral, 141 146 his
proceedings in England and France,
146, given command of a squadron for
Española, 147 arrived at Española 161
saved the colony, 162 attended his
brother during his illness, 170, made
Adelantado, 173 183, at the battle of
Vega Real 176, left in command at
Española 179, his government 191 197
founded San Domingo, 193 in Xaragua
when Roldanilla arrived, 204 sent home
in chains, 206, with his brother on the
last voyage 278 284, 250, saved the *Gallega*,
251, the Admiral's anxiety for him, 250,
his transactions with the chief Quibian
261, explored the river Veragua, 261–262
his capture of Quibian, 263 attacked at
Belen, 264 defended his brother against
the mutineers 270, defeated Porras,
270, 288, went to court from Seville,
288 attended on his brother to Segovia,
289 sent by his brother to welcome
Philip I at Segovia 299 adviser to his
nephews 304 journey to Rome 304,
305, went to Española with his nephews
306, early offer of the government of
Veragua to, 317, estates, death, 318
—— Bartholina sister of Domenico, mar
ried to Pavello, 2
—— Blanchinetta birth, 6, married to
Bavarello 12, 13
—— Cristoforo, birth at Genoa 5, 13,
childhood, 6, description of a boy, 7,
first went to sea, 8, study of maps, 7
removal of his family to Savona, 10, 11
witness to a will, guaranteed a debt of
his father, witness to sale of a house,
11, his knowledge when he left Genoa,
12, left Genoa for Lisbon 12 18, dis
cussion of the date of his birth, 13 14,
question of his having studied at Pa
via 15, story of his having served with
a corsair, 16 had seen Perugino's me
morials in the church of S. Stefano,

17, called "di Terraross.a," 18, impression made on him by maps showing islands in the Atlantic, 21, his object in coming to Portugal, 22, voyages to England and Ireland, 22, personal appearance, 24, marriage, 24, 27, knowledge of navigation, 28, 31, studies, 32, correspondence with Toscanelli, 31, 32, voyage to Guinea, 32, at La Mina, 33, arguments for a western voyage to the Indies, 35, 36, his project submitted to the king of Portugal, 35, goes to Spain, 36, seeks help at La Rabida, 39, 40, hospitality of the Duke of Medina Celi to, 42, arrival at the Spanish court, 42, his proposal rejected by Talavera, 44, 45, friendship of Dr Deza, 46, residence near Salamanca, 46, 47, 48, conferences at Salamanca, 47, 48, payments to, 49, 52, at surrender of Malaga, 49, his love for Beatriz Enriquez, 50, last visit to Portugal, 51, witnessed the return of Bartholomew Diaz from the discovery of the Cape of Good Hope, 52, at siege of Baza, 53, his patience exhausted, 53, second visit to La Rabida, 53, ordered to come to Granada 55 departed when his demands were not granted, 56; recalled, 59, the concessions to, 59; his appearance when he sailed on his first voyage, 64, fitting out the expedition at Palos, 64–74, maps, &c, for his first voyage, 72, departure from Palos, 73, his two reckonings, 75, 76, on the variation of the compass, 76, his voyage, 74–70, saw a light, 80, absurd charge of unfairness, 87, lauded at Guanahani, 81, his voyage through the Bahamas to Cuba, 84, 86, abstract of his journal by Las Casas, 89, his first anchorage at Cuba, 108, a close observer of nature, 112, discovery of Española, 114, loss of the *Santa Maria*, 116, his account of the natives, 117, study of the weather, 121, route homeward selected, 122, reckoning, 123, proceedings in the storm 127, 124, at the Azores, 125, 126, in the Tagus, 129, greatness of his discovery, 128, his journal and letter, 129, 131, 132, reception at Seville, 133, 134, and at Barcelona, 135, 136, grant of arms to, 138, story of the egg, 139, aspirations, 140; preparations for his second voyage, 142 as an administrator, 145, second voyage, 148, his belief in the truthfulness of Guacanagari, 153, 154, foundation of Isabella, 155, sends out exploring parties, 155, memorial respecting slavery, 156, 157, illness, 158, organisation of expeditions, 159, 160, 161, third voyage of discovery, 163, on south coast of Cuba, 164, 165, 166, serious illness, 166, 169, discovery of Jamaica, 164, conversation with a cacique of Cuba, 167, return to Isabella, 169, battle of Vega Real, 176, return to Spain, 178, 179, return voyage, 180, 181, guest of Bernaldez, 182, reception by the sovereigns at Burgos, 182, entail of his estates, 183, infirmities, 185, third expedition from Spain, 185, 186, plan for the third voyage, 187 speculations respecting the Gulf of Paria and the terrestrial paradise, 190, 191, his consummate seamanship 192, voyage to Española, 192, negotiations with Roldan, 198, restored peace, 199 executes Mujica, 200, outrage by Bobadilla, 205, sent home in chains, 206, 207; letter to Juana de Torres, 207, 208, confidence in his mission, 208, his "voices," 208, 266, 296, his appeal to the Queen, 208, 209 reception by the sovereigns at Granada, 210, friendship with Time-iano, 213, scheme for the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre, work on the prophecies, 214, 215, letter to the Pope, 215 scheme for the discovery of a strait, argument, 216, copies of his grants and privileges deposited in safe custody, 219, first will, 220; bequest to the city of Genoa, 200, sketch attributed to, 221; letter of his advice to his son Diego, 220, 224 last voyage, 250 offered aid to Portuguese at Arzilla, 251 warned Ovando of the coming hurricane, 253, discovery of the coast of Honduras, 255, terrible navigation on Honduras coast, 256, anxiety for his brother and son, 256, connected his discoveries with those of Bastidas, 258, sufferings of his people, 258, 259, results of the last voyage, 268, wrecked at Jamaica, 270 conversation with Mendez, 271 his letter from Jamaica to the sovereigns, 272, 273 use made of an eclipse, 277, mutiny of Porras, 276, pardoned the mutineers, 280, rescued from Jamaica 281 kindness to his people, return to Spain, 283; at Seville, 286, letters to his son, 288, visit of Vespucci to 288, journey to Segovia, 289, fruitless attempts to obtain justice, 289, death at Valladolid, 291, interment of his body, 292, 302, portraits, 293–295, character, 295–301, signature, 296, will, 301; alleged inaccuracy of, 303; his books, 327, biographers, 328–343, writings, 335 places named after him, 355; monuments 356

Colombo, Cristoforo, second son of Diego, continued the line, 319

—— Diego or Giacomo brother of the Admiral birth, 6, apprenticed, 12, 14, joined his brother in Spain, 13, 141, accompanied the Admiral on his second voyage, 142, 149, President of a commission of government, 153, 161, went home to answer Flanders, 176, at San Domingo, 192, in command when Bobadilla arrived, 204, sent home in chains, 206, took orders, died, 224

—— Diego, son of the Admiral, birth, 24, left Lisbon with his father, 35, at La Rabida 39, 41, 53, 56, second mother in Beatriz Enriquez, 52, page to Prince Juan, 69, 146, with his father at Cadiz, 145, page to the Queen, 183, annoyed by malcontents at Granada, 202, with his father at Granada, 213, letters of advice to, from his father, 223, 224, 252,

his father's anxiety for his welfare, 250
at court, 280; letters from his father, 287, 288; marriage, 300; lawsuits, 305; made governor of the Indies, 306, 317; his palace, 309; return to Spain and death, 318; children and descendants, 318–321
— Colombo, Domenico, father of the Admiral became a cloth weaver 2; settled at Genoa, 3; his houses, 4; children, 4, 5, 6; removal to Savona to return to Genoa, 12; death and character, 13
help from his son, 241
San Domingo called after 192
— Fernando, son of the Admiral his biography of his father, 13; 328
admission of liability to error, 15, 22, 36, 33; birth, 50; with his father at Cadiz, 145; page to the Queen, 183; annoyed by malcontents at Granada, 202; with his father on his last voyage 221, 230, 250
at Jamaica 270–282; at court, 288; went to Española with his brother, 300; early life 322; pursuits, 323; first work, 324
travels, 325; house and garden at Seville 325; public employment, 326
description of, 326; library, 327; "Cosmographia Introductio" in library of, 351
— Giacomo (see Diego)
— Giovanni, house at Terrarossa, 2
— Giovanni Antonio, 2; in command of a caravel in the third voyage of the Admiral 187; account of, by Las Casas, 188
— Giovanni Pellegrino, birth, 11; witness to a sale, 11; death 12
— Luis son and heir of Diego, created Duke of Veragua, 319; imprisoned, 319
— Matco, 3
Colombina Biblioteca at Seville, 32, 62, 224–327
Columbus (see Colombo)
Como, portrait of Columbus at 293, 295
Comogre, ally of Vasco Nuñez, 314
Compass, first use 28; description 29; origin, 30; variation observed by Columbus 76
Concepcion Cay, the second island of Watling 95
Puerto de la in Española, 114
Concessions to Columbus, 59
Continent of the New World discovered, 190; not seen by Cabot on his first voyage, 228 230
Contrasta, La Costa de los, 289
Copinagoa, 240, intended settlement of Ojeda 241 245 (see Ojeda)
Cordera caravel in third voyage of discovery 181 parts company with Niña 108 and returns 109
Cordova, Hernando, &c., on Yucatan coast, 317
— the court at 43 Committee of Talavera sitting at 55 family of Juan at, 59, wife and sons of Columbus left at, 68, pension from dues in shambles of, for first sighting land, 87
Coro discovered by Ojeda 240
Coronel, Pedro Fernandez member of a commission of government at Isabella, 101 despatched with supplies to Española, 186, opportune arrival, 197
Correa da Cunha, 25
Cortereal Gaspar, first voyage 234, second voyage 234, 235; his discoveries shown on Cantino map, 237, 238
Cortes, Hernan discoverer of Mexico, 309, 317
Coruña, arrival of Philip I and Juana at, 232
Cosa Juan de la, pilot of Santoña owner of the flagship and pilot in the first voyage, 60, 69; land fall identified by his map 89, 91; description of his map, 90; in the second voyage, 144, 149; with Columbus in his third voyage of discovery 163, received the map of Cabot from Ayala, 230; with Ojeda, 239, with Bastidas, 243; his map drawn before that of Cantino, 248; supplied funds to Ojeda, 310 death, 311
Cosco Leander de, a Catalan translator of the first letter of Columbus into Latin, 132
"Cosmographiae Introductio," 352 (see Waldseemüller)
Cotthamama, chief of Higuey, 172, death, 275
Crato, Prior of, Columbus the guest of 127
Crooked Island, same as Isabella, 86, 95, 98, 102
Cruz, Cape, 269 (see Santa Cruz)
Ctesias, in Strabo, arguments for a west ern voyage from 34
Cuba, news of 86, arrival of Columbus at, 87, 108, name of Juana given to, 86 reminded the Admiral of Isla in Sicily and at Granada, 108, first joint reached, 109, men sent into the interior, 111, products, 112, eastern extremity 113, discovery of south coast, 164, conversation of Columbus with a cacique of, 167, believed to be a peninsula question of insularity 216, insularity discovered, 309, Diego Velasquez governor of, 306
Cuenca, Ojeda born at, 124
Cueva (see Cuneta)
— Juan de, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70, servant of Ojeda, 246
Cuevas (see Santa Maria de las Cuevas)
Cumana, Niño at, 241, Guerra at, 243
Curaçoa Island called by Ojeda Isla de los Gigantes, 240, 245
Cursitor of the Herrera map, the little San Salvador of modern maps, 92
Cumana, Niño at, 241, attack on, by Ojeda, 245

DARIEN, expedition of Vasco Nuñez to 311
D'Ailly, Cardinal Petrus, his work entitled "Imago Mundi" studied by Columbus, 30, marginal notes in, referring to the voyage of Bartholomew Diaz, 52, the book with Columbus on the first voyage, 72; in the "Biblioteca Colombina," 327
D'Anville gave the name of San Salvador

to Cat Island, 95 "Triangulo or Watling's," on a map by, drawn for Charlevoix, 98
Darien discovered by Bastidas, 243, 247, 258, Ojeda at, 311 (see Ojeda Enciso, Nicuesa, Vasco Nuñez)
D'Avezac on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15
D'Azambuja, Diego, formed settlement of La Mina, 33
De Bry, portrait of Columbus in, 294
Declination, tables of Regiomontanus, 28
Degree, length according to Alfraganus, 34, measurement of, by order of Almamum 35
Desastre, Rio del 257
Desmoni, Cornelio, work on Columbus, 311
Deza Dr Diego de, Prior of San Estevan at Salamanca, afterwards Bishop of Palencia and Archbishop of Seville, friendship for Columbus, 16, arranged the conferences at Salamanca, 47–48, 182, the Admiral's hope of support from 287, 289 300
Diaz, Bartolomeu, his reception at Lisbon witnessed by Columbus, 52, question relating to his voyage, 62, visit to Columbus in the Tagus, 126, death, 183
—— Miguel, sent to explore the Rio na gold mine, 178, in charge of St Domingo fort when it was seized by Bobadilla, 205
Diego, Maestre, boatswain of the *Santa Maria* 69
—— of Membles and of Mendoza, seamen left at Navidad, 70
Dinis, King of Portugal employed a Genoese as Admiral of Portugal, 15
Dominica Island discovery, 149, course shaped for in third voyage, 188
Dominican Convent (see Plata, Monte de)
Dondero, his defence of Columbus, 341
Dorados (see Fish)
Dragon, Boca del, 192, Ojeda passed the 239, *Niña* attacked while passing, 241, Pinzon at, 242
Dugongs mistaken for mermaids, 120
Duro, Capt Cesareo F, works on Columbus, 338, 342

ECLIPSE of moon, longitude found by observing, 29, use made of, by Columbus at Jamaica, 277
Egg story of Columbus and the, 139 140
Elcano, erroneous way of spelling the name of Sebastian del Cano (see Cano), 317 *n*
Eleuthera, in the Bahamas, the *Cigateo* of the Herrera map 92
Emanuel, King of Portugal, discoveries under, 183, 184
Enamorada, Cabo de, in Española, 121
Enciso, Martin Fernandez de, to follow Ojeda with reinforcements, 310, arrival at Darien, 311, deposed, 312, author of the "Suma de Geografia," 313, enmity against Vasco Nuñez, 316
Engaño, Cape, 179
England, voyage of Columbus to, 22, Bartolomé Columbus in, 52, 146
English expedition in search of Brazil, 18 (see Cabot Coquivacoa)
Enriquez, Beatriz, second wife of Columbus, 38, 50, question of her marriage, 60, 61, 62 pension given to, by Columbus, 87, 144; her brother, 187, young Diego enjoined to treat her as a mother, 223, mentioned in the will of Columbus, 60, 61 (see *Ayuda*)
Entail of estates and honours by Columbus, 183
Equator crossed by Pinzon, 242
Erasmus presented Fernando Columbus with one of his works, 321
Escalaz, Juan de, one of the first to reach the South Sea, 315
Escobar Diego de, sent as a spy to Jamaica by Ovando, 378
—— Rodrigo seaman of the *Santa Maria*, 70, a boy in the 1st voyage of Columbus accompanied Mendez to the village of Quibian, 263
Escobedo, Rodrigo de, secretary in the first voyage of Columbus, 69, landed at Guanaham, 80, left at Navidad, 118
Escribano de Racion (see Santangel)
Española, discovery, 114, Indians of, 117, arrival off, in second voyage 152, south coast reached on third voyage, 168, description natives, 170, 171, chiefs of, 172, settlement by the Admiral, tribute, 177, mission of Aguado to, 178, Columbus forbidden to touch at, 221, Ojeda at, 240, Pinzon at, 242 Bastidas lost his ships at, 243, Columbus pleaded for the natives, 289, Audiencia established 308, 309 (see St Domingo Isabella, Navidad, Bobadilla, Ovando, Roldan)
Esquivel, governor of Jamaica, 310, 311
Essequibo river, 239
Eugenius IV., embassy from the Grand Khan to, 31
Evangelista, Isla, western end of Cuba, 167
Exuma Island, 95, Washington Irving's third island, Admiral Becher's third island, 101

FARA, city of Cami, in Cuba, 109
Farol, Punto del, name of Columbus for Cape Morant, 168
Fayal, Behaim at, 27
Ferdinand of Aragon, 13, at Salamanca, 46, siege of Malaga, 49, reception of Columbus at Barcelona 135, 136, presented a suit of armour to Columbus, 139, his sale of the garrison of Malaga into slavery, 157, at Girona, 182, pestered by beggars, from Española, 202, his motives for conduct towards Columbus, 203, ashamed of the treatment of Columbus 210, perceived the importance of the discoveries of Columbus, promised restoration of rights to Columbus, 224, perfidy 238 neglected the dying wishes of the Queen, 287, at Segovia, 288 never placed a motto on the tomb of Colum-

bus, 203, at Najdes 304 conversation with Diego Columbus on his rights 305, consented to a lawsuit 305, death, 309, his bad appointments 310
Fernandez of Huelva, seaman on board the *Santa Maria*, 70.
—— of Segovia and of Leon seamen, 71
—— Francisco seaman of *Niño*, 71
Ferrara, Duke of (see Cantino)
Ferrer, a lapidary, his letter to Columbus, 187, 215
Fieschi, Bartolomè, captain of the *Vizcaina* in the last voyage of Columbus 231 companion of Mendez in the canoe voyage from Jamaica, 27 280, faithful to the end, 290
Fish in the Atlantic, 77 (see Tommas, Dorados)
Flechado, Puerto 240
Florence, Portolano Medicco at, 9, gunnum of Toscanelli in Santa Maria Novello at, 31, birthplace of Vespucci, 180, portrait of Columbus at 293
Flores in the Azores, hue of no variation, 76, 121
Fonseca Juan Rodriguez de Archdeacon of Seville, placed at the head of the home administration of the Indies, 141, his character, 141 142 disgraceful condition of provisions shipped by, 155, persistent obstruction by, 183, one of his creatures kicked by the Admiral 185, his calumnies, 202, 206 dissembled his real feelings when Columbus returned in chains, 210, 212 advises a breach of the Admiral's rights, 238, continued in office, 316, his bad appointments, 316
Fontanabona, Valley of, 2, 11
Fontarossa, Giacomo de, maternal grandfather of Columbus, 4
Gonzenno, brothers of the mother Guglielmo, f of Columbus, 4 10
— Susanna di mother of Columbus, 4 her children, 5, 6, her consent to sales of property 10, death 12, 13
Foronda, Pedro de, seaman of the *Niño* 71
Fortune Island, 102
—— Hill 105
Forzio, Genoese historian 8
Fox Capt G. V., his theory of the land fall 97
Fracastor, friend of Ramusio, account of Sebastian Cabot by a guest in the house of, 231
Francisco of Huelva, seaman of *Santa Maria*, 70
Frederick Barbarossa Emperor walls of Genoa built as a defence against 4
Fregoso of Genoa 8 9
Frisatte bird (see Rabiforcado)
Fristedia 23
Fritillo of Quinto, married to Battistina Colombo, 7
Fuentarabia, Martin di, drowned, 256.

GALERA, Cabo de la or Trinidad, 189
Gallega, ship, in the last voyage of Columbus 251, unseaworthy condition, 253, in danger in the hurricane, 254, death of her captain, 280
Gallegos, Francisco Garcia, of Moguer, seaman of the *Pinta*, 71
Galley, war, description, 7
Galvano, his account of the voyages of Cabot, 231, and of Corterael, 234
Galway, Irishman from, in the first voyage 70, 118
Gama, Vasco di voyages, 183
Garajao lord a term, 77
Garay, Francisco de sent to explore the Hayna gold mine, 178
Garcia Alonzo, seaman of the *Pinta*, 71
—— Bartolomè, boatswain of the *Pinta*, 71
—— Diego of Jerez, seaman of *Santa Maria*, 70
—— de Ocampo (see Ocampo)
Gaspar Franciscan monk at the death-bed of Columbus, 291
Genoa, political situation in the fifteenth century, 1, people, 2, Domenico Colombo settled at, 3, walls, 4, house of Columbus at 4, facilities for the study of cosmography, 8, 9, Columbus born in, 13, documents intrusted to Oderigo, delivered up to city of, 219, account of documents in town-hall, 219, bequest of Columbus to, 220, visited by Fernando Columbus 321, statue of Columbus at, 356 (see St George, Bank of)
Genoese (see Portugal, Canary Isles, Azores) with Columbus, 163, 251
Geraldini, acquaintance of Columbus with, at Seville 41
Gibbs, G., on Turk's Island as the land fall, 93
Giguntes Isla de los (see Curaçoa)
Ginestrata dowry of the mother of Columbus at, 4, sale of, 10
Gioja Flavio, of Amalfi, adapted the compass for use at sea, 28
Giovio (see Jovius)
Globes (see Behaim, Schoner, Waldseemüller)
Godoy, Francisco de seaman in the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Goes, Damian de, his account of the first voyage of Corterael, 234
Gold reported at Saimoete and at Baleque, 112, in Española, 115, at Cibao, 117; at Samana, 122, sent to the sovereigns, 156 176 discovery of the Hayna mine, 177, Guarea trading for, 243 large nugget lost in the hurricane, 252, in Veragua 257, 272
Gomara the historian, his reception of the fable told by Oviedo about a pilot dying in the house of Columbus 37, on Sebastian Cabot, 231, 232, false statement respecting the voyage of Pinzon and Solis, 284 notice of, 333
Gomera Isle, ships of Columbus sail from, 75, Columbus at, on second voyage, 148, on third voyage, 187; Ojeda at, 230.
Gomez, Diego, at Cape Verde Islands, 18 on the importance of observations with the quadrant 36
Gonzalez, Jorge, of Triguetos, a seaman

on board the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Gonzalez, Tomas, archivist, copied the letter of Columbus to Santangel at Simancas, 131
Gorbolan, Genes de, sent to explore in Española, 155, return to Spain, 156
Gorda, caravel of Bobadilla's squadron, 204 (see Vallejo)
Gorricio, Francisco, the elder Diego Columbus died in house of, 224
—— Gaspar, Carthusian monk at Seville, and friend of Columbus, helped Columbus in his work on the prophecies, 214, 219 will of Columbus left in charge of, 220, young Diego to look to Gorricio for advice, 224, 252; with Columbus at Seville, 286
Gracia, Rio, in Española, 120
—— Isla de, 190
Gracias a Dios, Cape, 256
Granada, siege of, 53, 55, fall, 56, malcontents from Española at, 202, reception of Columbus by the sovereigns at, 210, residence of Columbus at, 213
—— Isle, called "Concepcion" by Columbus, discovery, 192
Grand Canary (see Canary)
Grande Puerto, in Cuba 164
Greenland, 23, sighted by Cortereal, 234, 237
Greytown, site passed by Columbus, 257
Grijalva, Juan de, voyage, 317
Gris Het, bay in St Lucia, rendezvous of Lord Rodney's fleet, supposed to be the anchorage of Columbus, 252
Guacanagari, a chief in Española, Columbus invited to visit his country, 115; his aid after the shipwreck, 117, visit to the *Niña*, 118, attacked and wounded by Coanabo, 153, Columbus believed his story, 154, came to warn Columbus at Isabella, 172, supported Columbus at Vega Real, 176, friendship for Columbus, 298
Guadalupe Island discovered, 150, Carib woman of, married Coanabo, 180; *Nina* at, 181
Guajira peninsula, 245
Guanahani Island, natives, 81, description, 83, natives of, escape from the *Niña*, 85; identification with Watling Island, 98; most northern island of the La Cosa map, 90, on Herrera map, 91, requirements for its identification, 92, Turk Island theory, 93, Cat Island theory, 94, Mayaguana theory, 96, 97, Samana theory, 97; Watling Island, 99, 103, 104, 105, guide and interpreter from, 164, 167, 173, 174
Guanaja Island, or "Isla de los Piños, on the Honduras coast, discovered by Columbus, 255
Guanima, the Cat Island of modern charts, 92
Guarapiche river, Ojeda anchored off, 239
Guardias discovered and named by Columbus, 192
Guantanamo, in Cuba, Columbus at, 164
Guarionex, chief of the Vega Real, 172, 173, Guanahani interpreter married to daughter of, 174 insurrection of 194, generous treatment of, by the Adelantado, 195; imprisoned, 195, death, 245, 253
Guatiguana, a subordinate chief of Española, attack on the Spaniards, 172
Guchia, a caravel with the Admiral's property, alone escaped the hurricane, 254
Guerra, Cristoval, partner in the voyage of *Niña*, 241; second voyage of, 243
—— Luis, 243
Guevara, Hernando, disturbance caused by, in love with Higuemota, daughter of Anacaona, imprisoned, 199, liberated by Bobadilla, 204, commanded one of Ojeda's ships, 244, 246
Guinea coast, shown on the map of Toscanelli, 31, Columbus on, 33, palms of, 108, dugongs, 120.
Gulf Stream, argument of Columbus for a strait, based on the, 216, 283
Gulf weed, 78 (see Sargasso Sea)
Gutierrez, Pedro, volunteer in first voyage of Columbus, 69; saw the light, 86, 87, sent to Guacanagari, 117; left at Navidad, 118

HAKLUYT'S "Divers Voyages," map of Lok in, 228
Hamacas used by the natives of Cuba, 112.
Hamigueyaga, port in Española, 216
Harrisse, Mr., on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, doubts the story that Columbus studied at Pavia, 15, his view respecting the visits to La Rabida, 63, his discovery of a copy of the Columbus documents at Paris, 219, on the question of the chains having been buried with Columbus, 225, reproduced the Cantino map, 236, views respecting the Cantino map, 248, on the life of Columbus by his son, 328, notice of his works on Columbus, 330
Haushab, General, his globe by Waldseemüller, 354
Havana, Columbus finally interred in Cathedral of, 292
Hayna river, in Española, discovery of gold mine, 177, 179, fort to be built, 181, 193
Heiao, Francisco, of Avila, seaman in the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70.
Henry VII of England, his rejection of the proposal of Bartolomé Columbus, 52, scheme of Cabot submitted to, 227
Henry, Prince, the Navigator, 18 his patronage of the slave trade, 157, 297
Hereford mappe-monde, 21
Hermoso, Cabo, 86, 105
Hernandez, Dr Garci, physician of Palos, 54, 55, his evidence, 63, in consultation with Columbus, 61
—— Garci, surgeon of the *Pinta*, 71
Herrera, Antonio de, historiographer of the Indies, evidence of his map in finding the landfall of Columbus, 89, account of his map, 91, position of Turk Island on his map, 93, of Samana, 97, copied the account of the voyage of Pinzon and Solis from Las Casas, 285, notice of, 333

Higuey eastern part of Española, 172
desolated by Ovando, 275 (see Cuba banama)
Higuezmota (see Guevara)
Hojeda (see Ojeda)
Holy Sepulchre, scheme of Columbus for the recovery of, 140, 211
Honda, 245
Honduras coast discovered by Columbus 255 258, terrible weather off, 256, 272
Pinzon and Solis in bay of 283 discovery falsely claimed for Pinzon and Solis, 285
Huelva the Muhartes residing at, 36 on the river Odiel 39, 53 sailors recruited at, 60, banishment of Jews 74
Huerta, La (see Quintana)
Humboldt, Baron Von, on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, discovery of the La Cosa map by, 90 believed Cat Island to be the Landfall, 94 his 'Examen Critique' 37 his theory respecting the voyages of Vespucci, 345
Hurricanes, destruction of caravels at Isabella 170, at San Domingo destruction of the fleet, 254, 272
Hylacomylus (see Waldseemüller)

Icaran voyage of Columbus to 22, 23
'Imago Mundi,' 30, 62 (see D'Ailly)
Imagua Isles, in the Landfall theory of Navarrete, 93
Indies Toscanelli described the trade of 31 and the best route to 31 32, arguments of Columbus for a western voyage to, 33, 34
Indians of Guanahani, 81; as interpreters, 161, 167, of Cuba, 110 111, youths taken at Rio de Mares, 113 of Española, 114, 117, 120, 171, at Saltaua, 121, landed at Palos, 128, at Seville 133, at Barcelona, 135, King Ferdinand and the Prince sponsors to, 137, slaughter of in the Vega Real, 176 account of natives of the isthmus, 201, 265, of Jamaica, 270, 277, with Mendez in a canoe, 273, 271 intercession of Columbus for, 289 (see Las Casas, Ovando, Española, Cuba, Jamaica)
Infantado Duke of, Journal of Columbus in archives of, 89
Ires, Guillermo, of Galway, seaman of *Santa Maria*, 70, left at Navidad, 118
Irons placed on Columbus, 205, 207, note on, 225
Irving Washington, on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, believed Cat Island to be the landfall, 91, notice of the work, 337
Isabella Queen, notice of, 17, war with the Moors of Granada 41, friendship of Columbus, 44, winter at Salamanca, 46, Columbus in her service 49, marriage of her daughter at Seville, 53 letter to, from her confessor, Fray Perez 51, resolved to accept the proposal of Columbus 55, 56 58, her reward for sighting the land given to Columbus, 87, her reception of Columbus at Barcelona, 135, 140 approval of the proceedings of Columbus 170 173, at Laredo, reception of Columbus at Burgos on his second return, 182, took the sons of Columbus as her pages 183, persuaded by her husband to break faith with the Admiral, 203 appeal of Columbus to 209, her reception of Columbus when he returned in chains 210, 211 sanctioned the last voyage of Columbus, 216, promised restoration of the Admiral's rights 224, death, 287, friendship for Columbus, 300
Isabella Island, the fourth discovered by Columbus, 86, 102, 103 (same as Crooked Island Samoeto)
—— town, founding of, 155 return of Ojeda to, 156, discontent of the settlers, 158, troubles at, 160, arrival of Bartolomé Columbus at, 161 third voyage of discovery fitted out at 163, return of Columbus to 169, Guacanagari at 172 arrival of Torres with supplies 173, Canoabia brought prisoner to, 174 the Admiral leaves for Spain, 179, abandoned, 181, 193
Islands in the Atlantic, fabulous, 9, 10, 20, 21
Isthmus (see Darien, Indians, Panama)
Iti (see Bermuda)

Jamaica discovery, 161 168 ships of Bastidas left at, 244, Vergara sent to, by Ojeda, for supplies, 245 Columbus wrecked at, 270–281 Esquivel made governor, 306
Jardin de la Reyna, off Cuba, 165
Jeffery's Atlas, "Triangulo or Wathing on, 98
Jerez, Rodrigo de, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, 70, sent on an expedition into Cuba 111
—— Juan de pursor of the *Pinta*, 71
Jews, banishment from Huelva 74
Jimenes, Francisco, of Seville, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Joam I of Portugal, 21
Joam II of Portugal, founded La Mina, 33, plan of Columbus submitted to, 35, his perfidy, 35, permits Columbus to visit Lisbon, 53 marriage of his son with a daughter of Queen Isabella, 53, reception of Columbus on his return, 127, death, 183
John of Calabria, expedition to Naples, 7
Joseph, a learned Jew at Lisbon associated with Behaim, 26, scheme of Columbus submitted to, 35
Josephus on the gold of Solomon's temple, 262
Jovius, Paulus, portrait of Columbus in the gallery of, at Como, 203
Juan Maestre, assistant surgeon of the *Santa Maria*, 70
—— de Sevilla seaman of the *Pinta*, 71
—— Prince, heir of Ferdinand and Isabella, birth, 24, Diego Columbus made page to, 69, with his parents at Barcelona, 135, 137, his death in infancy 146, nurse of (see Torres, Juana de)
Juana, Queen, 182, 290
—— name given to Cuba, 87, 164
Julius II, Pope, 305

KETHELL, translator of the journal of Columbus, believed that Turk's Island was the landfall, 93
Khan, the Grand, in letter of Toscanelli, 31 supposed to be in Cuba, 109, 165, 166, mention of the Cabot 227, 229

LABRADOR, 232, 233
La Cosa (see Cosa)
Laet, Joannes de, map published at Leyden by, on which Cat Island is called San Salvador, 95
Lajes (see Tallarte)
Lamartine on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15
Landfall of Columbus, 90–107, requirements for, 92, 93
Lanzarote Isle, discovered by Genoese 17
Laredo, Queen Isabella at to see her daughter Juana sail for Flanders, 182 Ferdinand at, to receive Juana, 200
Lariezga, a Basque boy in the *Vizcaina* who was drowned at the Rio del Desastre, 256
Larreategui family representatives of Columbus, 320, Dukedom of Veragua in, 321
Las Casas, Bartolomé, Bishop of Chiapa 10, story of Columbus having joined a corsan and swam on shore in Portugal, 16, passage respecting voyage of Columbus to Iceland 22, on the personal appearance of Columbus, 24, 295, on the Perestrelo connection, 25 36, 37, on the handwriting and skill as draughtsmen of the Columbus brothers, 26, arguments for a western voyage 33, his account of Bartolomé Colombo, 51, use of the term "natural son" in referring to Fernando Columbus, 61 on pronunciation, 84, his abstract of the journal of Columbus, 89, 129, meaning of Cuban words, 110, began his work at a Dominican convent in Española 121, witnessed the arrival of Columbus at Seville, 134, defender of the Indians 134, his description of the Admiral's brother Diego, 142, his father and uncle sailed with Columbus on second voyage, 143, gives some names of the Windward Islands discovered by Columbus, 152, raised his voice against slavery, 157, his first voyage to the Indies, 212, 309, his opinion of Ovando 275, his account of the voyage of Pinzon and Solis, 285 his belief that Philip I would have done justice to the Admiral, 290, denunciation of the slave trade, 298, notice of his work as a biographer of Columbus, 328, 329, 330
Latitude, observations for, 30, 110 (see Pole Star)
Laurentian map of 1351, Azores shown on, 18
Lawsuit of Diego Columbus and the crown, 385
Lawyers low opinion of, entertained by Vasco Nuñez, 313
Ledesma, Pedro de, swam on shore at Belem, 267, joined the mutiny of Porras, 276, wounded, 280, pilot with Pinzon and Solis, 283, 284
Legnana Insula, 9
Lemos Count of, disturbance caused by, in Galicia 46
Lepe, sailors recruited at, 66, sailor from, who saw the light, 80
—— Diego de, expedition of, 242, 243
Leverono Antonio di, apprentice of Domenico Columbus, 3
Leyden (see Laet)
Lingar, plan of, measurement of a degree on, 35
Lisbon, Columbus and his brother at, 12 burial-place of the Moniz family at 25, 35, debts of Columbus at, 35 Bartolomé confers with his brother at, 51 Columbus at, on his return, 127, Cabot at, 226 Corte-real sailed from, 231, Vespucci at, 350, 351
Logrosan, Martin de seaman of the *Niña* 71
Lok, Michael, his map, indication of the discovery of Cabot 228
London Bartolome Columbus in, 52
Long Island called *Tumaco* on the Herrera map, 91 in Irving's theory, 95, identified as Fernandina, 102–104
Longitude by observing eclipses of the moon 27
Lopez, Juan pilot with Ojeda, 246
Loreto near Ancona, vow on board the *Niña* to go on a pilgrimage to, 123
Lotto Lorenzo, said to have painted Columbus, 295
Lud, William, founded a college at St Die, 351, 352
Ludovico il Moro (see Scillacio)
Lujan, Juan de, exploring Cibao mountains, 159, member of a commission of government at Isabella, 161
Luna, Fernan Perez de, notary in the third voyage of discovery, 163, 166

MADEIRA, voyage of Columbus to 22, supposed residence of Columbus at, 37 Columbus touched at, on his third voyage out, 187
Madrid portrait of Columbus at, 294 monument of Columbus 356
Magdalen Isles, the St John Isles of Cabot, 228
Magdalena, fort in Española, 174
Maima, in Jamaica, Porras and the mutineers at, 279
Major, R. H., on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15; on the early use of the compass, 38, showed that Watling Island was the landfall of Columbus, 98, 100, translation of letters of Columbus, 338, globe at Windsor attributed to Leonardo da Vinci by 354
Malaga, siege of, 49
Maldonado, Dr Rodrigo, on Talavera's committee, 45
Malipiero (see Trivigiano)
Manegueta, 120
Mango province, 34, 73, supposed to be in Cuba, 166
Manicotex, brother of Caonabo, at battle of Vega Real, 176

Mappemondes, Fra Mauro, 18, Hereford, 21, Ruysch, 20
Maps, Toscanelli, 31 (see Portolani, Herrera, La Cosa, Cantino)
Maracaibo, Gulf of, discovered by Ojeda, 240, 245
Marchena, Fray Antonio de, at La Rabida, friendship for Columbus, 40, 41, 51, his name confused with Perez, 63, in consultation with Columbus, 64 received the Admiral on his return, 127
Marco Polo 31 32
Mares, Rio de, in Cuba, 109, 111, 112, 113
Margarit, Mosen Pedro, Aragonese officer, chosen by King Ferdinand for service in Española, 143, in second voyage, 149, commendation of, 157 governor of Fort San Tomas, 157, his misconduct and disobedience of orders, 161, 163, 170, mutiny and return to Spain, 102, his misstatements refuted, 177
Margarita Island, discovered by Columbus, 102, passed by Ojeda, 239, 244, Niño at, 241
Mariana, his repetition of the pilot fable, 37
Marien, province of Española, 118, 176
Marigalante, flagship in the second voyage, 146, 148 149
—— Island, discovery of, 119
Mariguana island on the La Cosa chart, 90 (see Mayaguana)
Marinus in Ptolemy, arguments based on, 34
Markland, 23.
Marquez Diego overseer of the colony, 113 lost at Guadalupe, 131
Martin Alonzo, lieutenant of Vasco Nuñez 314, 315
—— Andres, owner of the *Gorda*, his wish to remove the chains of Columbus, 207; forwards the Admiral's letters to Granada, 210
Martinino Island, visited by Columbus, 252
Martyr Peter, account of Sebastian Cabot by, 231, of Columbus 332
Matuch at Chios compared with a product in Cuba 112
Matheos, Hernan Perez, his gossip about the Queen's reward, 88, a pilot in the third voyage of Columbus, 118
Matthew, ship fitted out by John Cabot, 227
Mauro Fra, map of, 18
Maury Captain, on the Sargasso Sea 78
Mayaguana Island on maps of La Cosa and Herrera 91, landfall according to Varnhagen, 96, 97, 105
Mayobanex, chief of Ciguay, imprisoned, 195
Medel Alonzo, master of the *Niña* in the third voyage of discovery, 163
Medueco (see Portolani)
Medici, patrons of Vespucci, 187, 316
Medina Celi, Duke of, hospitality to Columbus, 41 letter to the Queen, 42, Alonzo de Ojeda, a page of, 141
Medocello Lanzarote, discoverer of Lanzarote Island, 17
Mendez, Diego, volunteer with Columbus in his last voyage, 251, his expedition to the village of Quibian, 262 defence of Belem, 264, in command of the *Capitana*, 267, conversation with Columbus, 271, canoe voyage, 272, 280, at court, 286, 287, with the Admiral at his death, 300
Mendoza, Cardinal, Archbishop of Toledo uncle of the Duke of Medina Celi, 32, Columbus befriended by, 44, 48, received Columbus as his guest at Barcelona 178
—— Alonzo Perez de, expedition of, 243
—— Juan de, seaman of the *Niña* 71
Mercator first applied the name of America to the whole continent, 351
Mermaids or sirens off the coast of Española, 120
Mexico discovery of, 300, 317
Milan, Genoa, under protection of Dukes of, 1, 8 (see Ambrosian Library)
Mina, La (see S Georges)
Moguer on the parish in which Terraroxa is situated, 2
Modena, the Cantino map preserved at, 236
Moguer, on the Tinto, 39, 65, sailors recruited at, 62, Francisco Niño a native of, 128
Mona Island, 160
Moniz family, 24 burial place, 25, 37
Filippa, wife of Columbus 24, her family, 24, reasons for the belief that she was not a Perestrelo, 37, relations at Azzilla, 252
—— Isabel, wife of Bartolomeu Perestrelo, 25
—— Violante, married to Miguel Muharte, 36 pension 224
Monleone, Nicolo, Columbus a witness to will of, 11
Monserrat Island, discovery, 152 (see Huli)
Montalban, death of Diego Columbus at, 378
—— Diego de, of Juan, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Monte Cristi, mountains on the north coast of Española, 110, 120, 153 154, 155
Morant, Cape east end of Jamaica 105
Morcilla, Juan seaman in the *Niña*, left at Navidad, 71
Mosquito coast, 256
Moya Marquesa de, friend of Columbus, 48, 58
Mujica Adrian de, mutineer in Española, executed at Conception, 200, regret of the Admiral 209
Mulcento, Vicodi, at Genoa, 4
Muharte, Miguel, married to Violante Muniz, 36, had left Palos, 39, young Diego with them at Seville, 50
Muñoz, Juan Bautista, author of the "Historia del Nuevo Mundo, on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, examination of the Las Casas Abstract of the journal of Columbus, 90, believed Watling Island to be the Landfall, 98, notice of his great but unfinished work, 334

Murdoch, Lieut J B, his method of finding the landfall, 98, 101, 102

NAPLES succession, 1, expedition of John of Calabria to, 7
Naranjo, Puerto, first anchorage in Cuba, 87, 109
Navarrete, Martin Fernandez de, on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, as to the first sightings of land, 87, published the journal of the first voyage of Columbus, 90 translation of his work by La Roquette, 94, theory of the landfall, 93, theory respecting the latitude observations of Columbus, 110, published the letter of Columbus describing the first voyage, 121, his mistake about Englishmen at Coquivacoa, 248, notice of his great work, 219, 334-336.
Navassa Isle reached by Mendez, 274
Navidad, settlement in Española, 117, 118, the Admiral anxious to reach, 151, disaster at, 153, Caonabo confessed the slaughter of Spaniards at, 175
—— name given to the Gulf of Honduras by Pinzon, 283
Navigation, instruments for, 25, 26, 27, 28 (see Astrolabe, Compass Declination, Tables, Charts)
Nearchus, arguments for a western voyage from, 34
Needle variation, 76, 77 (see Compass)
Negro, Andalone di, treatise on the astrolabe, 9
Nevis Island discovered, 152
Newfoundland sighted by Cabot, 228, coast examined by Corte-real, 234, 237, position on the Cantino map, 238, 248.
New World, expression first used by Columbus, 209, 351 n
Neyva valley, in Española, men landed at, 169; the Adelantado met Behechio in, 194
Nicaragua river, 257
Nicolini, Donato, partner of Vespucci, 186
Nicuesa, Diego de, 258, governor of Castilla del Oro, 310, brings help to Ojeda, 311; misfortunes, 312; death, 313
Niña carrivel, her crew and owners, 71, 133, bad sailer, 74, ordered to close, 80 sights land, 80, natives escape from, 85, course for Samoete, 86 new mizen mast, 113, sent ahead to Española, 114 visit of Guacanagari to, 118, Admiral went home in, 119, storm, 123, 124, in the Tagus, 126, at Palos, 127, letter written on board, 129, sailors of, at Barcelona, 135, flag-ship in the third voyage of discovery, 163 consorts part company, 168, return to Spain with Columbus, 179
Niño, Alonzo, son of Francisco, in second voyage, 148
—— Cristoval Perez, master of the *Cordera* in the third voyage of discovery, 163
—— Francisco, seaman, 71, with Columbus in his second voyage, 148, pilot in the third voyage, 163
—— Juan, master and owner of the *Niña*, 71, accompanied Columbus to Seville on his return, 133
Niño, Pero Alonzo, pilot, 71; accompanied Columbus to Barcelona, 134, sent to Española with orders from the Admiral, 181, 193, with Columbus in the third voyage, 188, his own expedition 240, 241
Noli, Antonio di, discoverer of Cape Verde Isles, 18
Nombre de Dios, 242, 258, named by Nicuesa, 312, rescue of Nicuesa's people, 313
Noronha, Martin de, sent to invite Columbus to visit the King of Portugal, 127
Norsemen, their discoveries had no influence on Columbus, 23
Noya, Juan de, saved from Tristan's boat, 265

OCAMPO, Garcia de, serving with Ojeda, 244, 246
—— Sebastian de discovered the insularity of Cuba, 284, 309
Odorigo, Nicolo, Genoese ambassador, copies of the grants and privileges of Columbus sent to, 219, 220 (see Genoa)
Odiel river, 39, 74
Ojeda, Alonzo de, account of, 144; in the second voyage, 149 sent in search of a lost party at Guadalupe, 151, sent to explore the interior of Española, 155, superseded Margarit at San Tomas, 160, 161; besieged by Caonabo, 174; his capture of Caonabo, 175, voyage, 230, 239, discoveries, 240, second voyage, 241-246, arrested by his captains, 246, failure of his expedition, 247, 248, made governor of Nueva Andalusia, 310, defeat by the natives, 316, death, 311 (see Vespucci)
—— Pedro de, nephew of Alonzo, 244
Olivella, Porto di, at Genoa, house of Domenico Colombo at, 4, sale, 11
Orinoco River, 239
Orchi Nobile Alessandro de, of Como, inherited the Giovio portrait of Columbus, 273
Ortegon, Diego, married Francesca Colombo, 320
Ortiz, Juan, seaman of the *Niña*, 71
Ovando, Fray, Nicolas de, sent to Española to supersede Bobadilla, his character, 212, refused permission to the Admiral to anchor at San Domingo, 252, 278, and would give no help, 253, warned of the approaching hurricane, 264 his atrocious cruelties, 275, sent a spy to Jamaica, 278, disgraceful conduct in abandoning Columbus at Jamaica, 281, the Queen's horror at his atrocities, 287, recall and death, 306
Oviedo, Gonzalo Fernandez de, historian, his description of the personal appearance of Columbus, 24, his fable about the pilot who had been to the Indies before Columbus, 37, his account of the reception of Bartolomé Columbus by Henry VII, 52, his story of the sailor from Lepe seeing the light, 87, witnessed reception of Columbus at Barcelona, 136, false statement re-

specting the voyages of Pinzon and Solis to Yucatan, 283, 284; came to the Indies with Pedrarias 316, biographer of Columbus, notice of, 331

PACHECO, Alonzo Tellez, death of Diego Columbus in house of, 318
Palacios (see Bernaldez)
Palencia, Bishop of (see Deza)
Pallavona, Giovanni, neighbour of Domenico Colombo at Genoa, 4
Palmas, ships of Columbus anchored off, 75
—— Cabo de, in Cuba, 109
Palos, on the river Tinto, 38 Dr Garci Hernandez, physician of, 54 to supply two caravels for the expedition of Columbus 60, description of the town and church, 64, 65, sailors recruited at, 66, expedition fitted out at, 65–72, departure of the expedition from, 74, return to, 127, many sailors from, in the third voyage of discovery, 167 Niño fitted out his ships at, 241, Vicente Pinzon sailed from, 242
Panama discovered, 358
Panuco discovered, 317
Papal Bull, 137, 233, 237 (see Alexander VI.)
Paradise, terrestrial, speculations of Columbus on, 191
Paraguana peninsula, 240
Pardales (sandpipers), seen in the Atlantic, 78
Pareto, Bartolomeo, draughtsman of Genoa, 9, Portolano by him recording discovery of Lanzarote, 17, Atlantic islands shown, 21, 29
Parmigiano, portrait of Columbus attributed to, 295
Pasamonte, Miguel, treasurer in Española, 309
Paria, Gulf of, 190, 216, 236, 239, 241, 244
—— Punta de, 192
Pasqualigo, Lorenzo, letter on voyage of Cabot, 228
—— Pietro, on voyage of Cortereal, 235–237
Pavia University, story that Columbus studied at, 10 15, 16 (see Scillacio)
Paz, Puerto de la, in Española 115
Pearls, 192, obtained by Niño, 241, Guerra trading for, 243
Pearl fishery, 238
Pedrarias, de Avila, governor of Darien sent to supersede Vasco Nuñez, 310 puts Vasco Nuñez to death, 316
Pedro of Talavera, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Peñalosa, Francisco de, uncle of Las Casas, 143
Peragallo, Dr Prospero, as to letter from Columbus to Toscanelli on his return 147, his work in defence of the authenticity of the "Historie" of Fernando Columbus, 328
Pereira, the Constable of Portugal, 24
Perestrello, Bartolomeu, married Isabella Moniz, 25, confusion respecting the connection of the family with the wife of Columbus, 36, 37
Perez, Alonzo, of Huelva, Admiral's servant on the third voyage, sighted land, 188
—— Alonzo, of Osorno, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
—— Alvaro, of Osorno, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
—— Bartolome, of Rota, pilot of the *San Juan* in the third voyage of discovery, 163
—— Fray Juan, guardian of La Rabida, 54, mission to the Queen, 55, his letter of good news to Columbus, 56, his name confused with that of Marchena 63, in consultation with Columbus, 64, 65, his negotiation with the Pinzons, 65, exhortation to the crews, 73 received the Admiral on his return, 127
Peschel, Oscar, theory of the landfall, 98
Pesci, Giuseppe, on the birthplace of Columbus, 311
Pessagno family, memorials on church of San Stefano, Genoese Admirals of Portugal, 17
Pessagno, Emanuele, Admiral of Portugal, 17
Petrarch, mentioned the rediscovery of the Canary Isles by Genoese, 18
Peru, conqueror of, 309
Philesius (see Ringmann)
Philip I. (Archduke, marriage with Juana, 182, arrival in Spain, 290, his order for the restoration of the property of Columbus to his heirs, 304
Piedad chapel, burial-place of the Moniz family, 24
Pilgrimages, vows on board the *Niño* during the storm, 123
Pilot who was said to have been in the Indies and to have died in the house of Columbus, 37 qualifications, 346, 350 (see La Cosa, Niño, Roldan, Ledesma, Ruiz, Pinzon, Solis, Sarmiento)
Pine apple, 150
Pinelo Francisco, treasurer under Fonseca, 142
Pinilla, Tomas Rodriguez, his work on Columbus in Spain 343
Pinos Bridge, Columbus recalled at, 59
—— Isla de los, western end of Cuba, 267
—— Isla, on Honduras coast (see Guanaja)
Pinta, caravel, 70, 75 79, 80, 81, 86, 109, 113, 119, 120, 122, 127
Pinzon family at Palos, 65
—— Francisco Martin, 65, master of the *Pinta*, 71
Martin Alonzo, 65, agreed to help the Admiral, 66 commanded the *Pinta*, 70, said to have advanced funds, 72, rigged a temporary rudder, 75 elosed to communicate with the Admiral, 79, landed at Guanahani, 81, information obtained off Cuba, 109, desertion, 113, rejoined, 119, natives seized by, 120 his vessel delayed the other, 122, return and death, 127
Vicente Yanez, 65, commanded the *Niña*, 71; landed at Guanahani, 81, his gossip about the reward for sighting land, 88, his first expedition, 241–242,

voyage to Yucatan, 283, the truth respecting the date of his Yucatan voyage, 284, 285, 317, 349
Pisa, Juan de, accountant of the colony, 143
—— Bernal Diaz de, mutiny at Isabella, 158
Pizarro, Francisco, conqueror of Peru, 309, 311 314, 315
Planas Island, in the Bahamas, 97
Pliny, arguments for a western voyage from 34, taught at Salamanca, 47, inaccurately described by, 112
Plannck, printer at Rome (see Cosco)
Plaza, Monte de, in Española, Dominican convent where Las Casas began his work, 121
—— Punta de la, Trinidad, 191
Pole star, height of, with reference to latitude, 123
Polo, Marco, quoted by Toscanelli, 73
Ponce de Leon, Juan, governor of Puerto Rico, 306, his concession a proof that the alleged first voyage of Vespucci was imaginary, 319.
Ponticello Vico Dritto di, at Genoa, house of Columbus, 4, 6, sale of house to Barsello, 13 thoughts of, 140, 141
Porcuna, Hernando de, seaman of the *Niña*, left at Navidad, 70
Porras, Francisco, captain of the *Santiago de Palos* in the last voyage of Columbus, 251, mutiny at Jamaica, 276, defeated and taken by the Adelantado, 279, 297
Portolano Mediceo, 9, 17
Portolani at Genoa, 9, 17 (see Benincasa, Bianco, Pareto), 31
Porto Santo, voyage of Columbus to, 22, grant of, to Perestrello, 25, mistakes respecting the connection of Columbus with, 36, 37, fable about the pilot in the house of Columbus, 37, Columbus touched at, on third voyage, 187.
Portraits of Columbus, 293–295
Portugal, Columbus and his brother in, 12, Genoese navigators serving in, 17, object of Columbus in coming to, 22 (see João II), Columbus leaves Portugal, 35, his last visits to, 51, 127, King of, concession to Cortereal, 234
Portugallo family, Counts of Gelves, held Dukedom of Veragua, 320.
Portugalete, Diego, boy in the *Capitana*, death, 259
Portuguese discoveries, 183, 184, at Azzilla, 251 (see Cortereal)
Prado, Prior of (see Talavera)
Prieto, Diego, of Palos, brought orders for Columbus to proceed to Granada, 55
"Prima Terra Vista," of Cabot, 227
Prophecies, work of Columbus on the, 211, 215.
Ptolemy quoted respecting Thule, 22, arguments for a western voyage from, 34, taught at Salamanca, 17 (see Waldseemüller)
Puerto de Bastimentos, 243, 257
—— Bello, 257, 267
—— Bueno, in Jamaica, 165
Puerto Flechado, name given by Ojeda, 240
—— Grande, in Cuba, name given by Columbus, 164
—— Naranjo, point at which Columbus reached Cuba, 87, 109
—— Rico Island (see San Juan), 252

QUADRANTS, observations with, 26, method of using 26 for the first voyage, 72, theory of Navarrete concerning, 110
Quarequa, chief in Darien, 315
Querido, Alonzo Gutierez, seaman of the *Niña*, 71
Quevedo, Bishop, came out with Pedrarias, 316.
Quezzi, home of the mother of Columbus, 3
Quibian, chief of Veragua, 260, captured by the Adelantado and escaped, 264, hostilities, 264, 273.
Quintanilla, Alonzo di, in charge of Columbus at court, 42 44, advocate of the proposal of Columbus, 48
Quintero, Cristoval, part owner of the *Pinta*, 70, 75.
Quinto al Mare, removal of the Columbus family to, 2
Quiriviri Isle, called La Huerta by Columbus, 257
Quisay, in letter of Toscanelli, 32, 73, 110

RABIA DE JUNCO, boatswain bird, seen in the Atlantic 77
Rabida, Santa Maria de la 39, 40, 41, second visit of Columbus to, 51, resided at while equipping the expedition, 60, 63, question of the two visits to, 63, return of Columbus to, 128, affection of the Admiral for 291
Rabihorcado bird (frigate-bird or skua), seen in Atlantic, 77
Ragged Isles, same as Islas de Arenas, 86, 102, 105
Ramusio on Sebastian Cabot, 231, 232
Rascon, Gomez, part owner of the *Pinta*, 70, 75
Redonda, Santa Maria de la, island discovered, 152
Regiomontanus, the astronomer, 26 his declination tables, 28 taught at Salamanca, 17, his almanac, 277
René I, father of John of Calabria, 7, story of Columbus having commanded one of his galleys, 14, 15
René II, Duke of Lorraine, letters of Vespucci sent to, 351, death, 355
Retrete Bay, named by Columbus, 258, 267.
Rincon, Antonio de, portrait of Columbus attributed to, 295
Ringmann (Philesius), Latin teacher at St Dié, 351
Riquelme, disorderly character, imprisoned at San Domingo, 200, liberated by Bobadilla, 205
Robertson on the date of the birth of Columbus 15, his authorities for the life of Columbus, 336
Roderick the Goth, tradition about Antilla, 20

Rodney, Lord (see Gros Bec Bay)
Rodrigo a learned Portuguese, associated with Behaim, 20, scheme of Columbus submitted to, 35
—— de Triana (see Triana)
Rodriguez, Sebastian, of Lepe, bearer of a letter from Fray Perez to the Queen, 55
Roldan, Alonzo Perez, master of the *Sea Juan* in the third voyage of discovery, 103
—— Bartolomè, pilot of the *Nina* 71 sailed with Lepe, 242
—— Francisco, made Chief Justice of Española by Columbus, 170, mutiny, 196, marches into Xaragua 197, negotiation and agreement with, 199 to be sent home, 213, 252, drowned in the hurricane, 250, 297
Roquette, De La, translator of Navarrete, believed Cat Island to be the landfall, 94
Roselly de Lorgues on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15, his portrait of Columbus, 295, his Life of Columbus, 337, 338
Rojllo, fabulous island in the Atlantic, 9, 21
Ruiz, Sancho, pilot of Columbus on the first voyage, 69
—— Garcia, of Santoña, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, 70
Rum Cay, 84, 100, 103, 104 (see Santa Maria de la Concepcion)
Ruysch, position of Antilla on his map, 20, possibly accompanied John Cabot, 230, 232

SANELLICO, chronicle quoted by Las Casas for the corsair story 16
Sacrobosco, work studied by Columbus 30, 47
Salamanca the sovereigns winter at description, 46 teaching at, 47, residence of Columbus near, 47, conferences at, 48 (see Deza)
Salcedo Diego de, Admiral's servant in the first voyage, 70, 80 assisted Caonabo in his agency at Española, 251 rescued Columbus from Jamaica, 281
Saltes, Bar of, 74, 127, 240
Samana or Attwood's Cay on the La Cosa and Herrera maps, 92, 97, Fox's landfall theory, 97, description, 98, 105
—— Peninsula, in Española, 121
Samonete Island, 86, 95, 98, 102, 104 (see Isabella)
Santa Isle, 190
San Agustin, Cape, 242, 243, 247, 258
San Andrea gate at Genoa, 1, 6, 12
Santangel, Luis "Escribano de Racion," friend of Columbus, 48 50, supplied funds to the Queen, 50, 72, letter from Columbus to, 120, 131, 132
Santa Anna Chapel, papers of Columbus deposited in, 219, Columbus buried in 292, the Adelantado buried in, 318
Santa Anna, Jamaica, 164
San Bartolomè name given by Ojeda to the Gulf of Maracaibo, 240
San Blas Cape, 243
St Brandon, fabulous isle of the Atlantic, 9, 21 on the globe of Behaim, 73, looked out for by Columbus, 77
Santa Catalina, in Cuba, 113
Santa Clara, at Moguer, 123
San Cristoval at Illyana, 192
Santa Cruz Island discovered, 152, inhabited by Caribs, 152
—— Cape, in Cuba, 108, 176
—— name given to Brazilian coast by Cabral, 184
—— Port settlement of Ojeda, 246
St Die in Lorraine, college founded at, by Walter Lud 331; Cosmographiæ Introductio printed at, 352
San Domingo, founded by order of Columbus, 184, 193 progress, 200, 201, Columbus refused permission to enter, 252, hurricane at, destroyed the fleet, 254, reception of Columbus at, on arriving from Jamaica, 281, body of Columbus buried at, 292, Diego Columbus governor, 300, *Audiencia* established, 309, palace built by Diego Columbus, 300
San Estevan, at Salamanca (see Salamanca)
St George, church at Palos, 65, 73, 128
Bank of, at Genoa, 1, 6, 210, bequest, 220, 300
—— Azores, 234
San Giorgio, fabulous isle of the Atlantic, 21
San Giorgio da Mina, 33
San Jorge Tristan de, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 71
Santa Gloria, Jamaica, 164, 270
St John Island, discovered by Cabot, 228
San Juan Bautista Isle (Puerto Rico), discovered, 153, Ponce de Leon, governor, 300
San Juan, caravel in the third voyage of discovery 103, 108, 160
Santiago, Cape Verde Isle, 18
Santiago de Palos, ship in the last voyage of Columbus, 251, 267, 270
St Kitts discovered, 152
San Lucar, Columbus sailed from, on his third voyage out, 186, Ojeda sailed from, 213, Guerra, 243, Columbus returned to, 282
St Lucia Isle, 252
Santa Maria de la Antigua Island discovered, 152 ship of Ojeda, 244
de La Concepcion Island, identified with Rum Cay 84 103, second island discovered by Columbus, 100 103
de La Cuevas, Carthusian monastery at Seville, 214 copy of the Admiral's privileges deposited at, 219, and his will, 220 Fathers of, 280, description, 280, Diego Columbus buried at, 318
—— de Guadalupe vow taken in the storm for a pilgrimage to, 103
de la Grmanol, a ship in the fleet of Ojeda 244
de Loreto (see Loreto)
—— Novella, 31 (see Toscanelli)
—— in the Azores, 125 126, 131
—— port near Cadiz, house of the Duke of Medina Celi at, 42, Ojeda sailed

from, 230, map drawn by Juan de la Cosa at, 90
Santa Maria, flag ship of Columbus in the first voyage, her sails and equipment 66 owner, 66, 69, shipwreck, 116
Santa Marta 293
San Martin Island sighted, 152
St Michael, Azores, 126
San Miguel, Gulf of, 315
St Nicholas Mole, 114, 161
San Roman Cape, 240
—— Salvador (see Guanahani) 83 90, 94
—— Sebastian de Uraba founded, 311, 312
—— Stefano, church in Genoa, 4, 6, 17
Santoña, native place of Juan de la Cosa, 66, 69, seamen from, 66 (see Villa)
San Thomas, Cape, in Española, 179
—— Thomas, fort in Española, 159, 160, 161, 174
St Ursula Island discovered, 153
St Vincent, Cape, 123, 127, 181
Sanchez, Ambrosio and Juan, master and pilot in the last voyage of Columbus, 250, Juan joined the mutiny of Porras, 276, allowed Quibian to escape, 264, killed, 280
Sandacourt, Canon of St Dié, translated the letters of Vespucci into Latin, 351
Sandpipers (see Pardales)
Sanguineti, Angelo, his Life of Columbus, 341
Saona Island, 169
Sargasso Sea, 78, 79
Sarmiento, Cristoval Garcia, pilot of the *Pinta*, 70
Sarzano at Genoa, 6
Savona, removal of Domenico Columbus to, 10, 11, 12, visited by Fernando Columbus, 324
Schoner's globe, name of America on, 351
Scillacio, Nicolo, professor of Pavia his silence in his book dedicated to Ludovico il Moro a proof that Columbus was not at Pavia, 16
Sebastian of Majorca, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad 70
Segovia, Columbus at, with the court, 289, codicil to the will of the Admiral written at, 290
Seven cities, another name for Antilla, 20
Seville, first arrival of Columbus at, 41, the court at, 53, reception of the Admiral at, after the first voyage, 128, 133 letter of Columbus to Santangel printed at, 132, exploit of Ojeda at 141, Carthusian monastery of Santa Maria de las Cuevas at 214 John Cabot at 226, last return of Columbus to, 283, house of Fernando Columbus at, 325
Sharks, 122, 259
Sicily, visited by Columbus 8, hills of Cuba compared to, by the Admiral, 108
Sierpe, Boca del, 190
Sierra Leone, voyage of Columbus to, 31 Columbus steers south to the latitude of, 188
Silber, printer at Rome (see Cosco)
Simancas, copy of the letter of Columbus describing the first voyage at, 131
Skua (see Rabiforcado)
Slave trade, memorial of Columbus respecting, 156 sanctioned at Malaga by the sovereigns 157, Las Casas raised his voice against it 157, prisoners taken in war sold as slaves, 276, 298, African slaves brought to the Indies, 309
Soderini, Pietro, schoolfellow of Vespucci, 180 346
Solis, Juan Diaz de, expedition with Pinzon 283 284, 285, 317
—— Martin de, of Valcuebo erected a monument to Columbus, 49
Solomon's temple, gold for, 262
Somerno, Raimond de, letter from London on the voyage of Cabot, 229 n
Soria, Juan de, accountant under Fonseca, 112
Soto, Hernando de, came out with Pedrarias, 316
South Sea, discovery, 314, 315
Spotorno on the date of the birth of Columbus, 15 published the documents sent by Columbus to Genoa, 219 341
Staglieno, Marchese Marcello, his researches, 339, 341
Stow's Chronicle, sailing of the expedition of Cabot, 230
Strabo, arguments for a western voyage from, 34, taught at Salamanca, 17
Strait, argument of Columbus for, 216 question settled, 268
Stuarts, Dukes of Berwick, hold the Dukedom of Veragua, 321
Sumeto (see Samoete)
Surmam, 239
Syrens (see Mermaids)

TABASCO river, discovered by Grijalva, 317
Tagus, Columbus in the, 126
Talavera, Friar Hernando de, Prior of Prado, proposal of Columbus rejected by, 44, 45, ill effects of his report removed, 48; opposed Columbus at Granada 56, 57
Tallarte de Lagos, Englishman, in the first voyage of Columbus, 69 suggestion that he was an Alard of Winchelsea, 69, left at Navidad, 69, 118
Tarducci, Francesco, his Life of Columbus, 341
Tendilla, Count of, friendly to Columbus, 48
Teneriffe, irruption when the ships of Columbus were in sight, 75
Terceira, 234
Tercedo navalis, ravages of, 258, 269
Tern (see Garajao)
Terrarossa, home of the father of Columbus, 2, 341; Cristoforo and Bartolomeo called de Terrarossa, 18
Terreros, Pedro de, Admiral's steward, 70, in the second voyage, 148 in the third voyage, 163, captain of the *Gallega* in the last voyage, 251 sent with messages to Ovando, 253; death, 280
Testigos discovered and named, 192
Thule, 22

Thylde (see William of Worcester)
Tiburon, Cape, west end of Española, 108, 274
—— Cape, in Darien, 243, 276, 269
Tinto river, 39
Tobacco, discovery of, 111, 112
Tobago island discovered, and called 'Asuncion," 192
Toledo, Don Fernando, father-in-Law of Diego Columbus, 300
—— y Roxas, Doña Maria de, marriage with Diego Columbus, 306, urged the claims of her children 319
—— Archbishop of (see Mendoza)
Tomuas (see Fish)
Tordesillas, treaty between Spain and Portugal regarding the Papal Bull 233
Torduya, Diego de, of Cabeza de Vuca, seaman of the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Torpa, Diego de, seaman of the *Niña*, 71
Torres, Antonio de, sailed with the Admiral in the second voyage, 142 return to Spain, 150, 170, arrival at Isabella with stores, 173, sent back to Spain, 176, in command of Ovando's fleet 212,
—— Juana de, nurse of Prince Juan, letter of Columbus to, 207–209, read by the Queen, 210, copies deposited in safe custody, 219
—— Luis de, interpreter in the first voyage, 70, sent into the interior of Cuba, 111
Tortuga Island, off Española, 214
Tortugas, 260
Toscanelli, Paolo, astronomer of Florence, 30, his letter to Columbus, 30, discovery of his original letter, 30, 377, influence of Columbus on the map of, 72, 79, 83 Grand Khan mentioned, 109, 210 letter of Columbus to, on his return, 134, 147
Trade winds, Columbus in the region of, 77, alarm of the sailors at their constancy, 79, return of the Admiral to Spain, against the 180, 181
Triana suburb of Seville, entry of Columbus by, 133, 219, Bastidas a native of, 243
—— Rodrigo de, sighted land from the *Pinta*, 81, 87
Triangula in the Bahamas, rocks near Samana, 92, 98
Tribute in Española, 1771, paid by Behechio, 195
Trinidad Island, discovery, 189
Tristan, Diego captain in the last voyage, 250, boat sent to Belem under, 265, killed, 265, 267
Trivigiano, Angelo secretary to the Venetian embassy, friendship for Columbus, correspondence with Malipieri 213, possibly had a portrait of Columbus painted, 295
Truxillo, in Honduras, 255
Turbuco, Indians of, defeat Ojeda, 310
Turk's Island, the landfall of Navarette, will not meet the requirements, 93 94, 105
Turuquetra Island, name of Guadalupe, 151

Uffizi Gallery at Florence, portrait of Columbus, 293
Ulloa, translator of the biography by Fernando Columbus, 14, 15, 328
Uraba, Gulf of, reached by Bastidas, 243, by Ojeda, 311
Urgel, Bishop of, Ferdinand and Isabella lodged in his house at Barcelona, 134
Uringa, Juan de, seaman in the *Nina*, 71
Uso di Mare, Antonio, Genoese navigator, account of St Brandan, 21

Valverde, near Salamanca, residence of Columbus at, 47, 48, monument, 49
Valencia de Torre, sovereigns wrote to Columbus from, 221
Valientes Indians of Veragua, 261
Valladolid court at, 146, Columbus at, 289, death of Columbus at, 291
Vallejo, Alonso, wish to remove the chains of Columbus, 207
—— Francisco Garcia, seaman in the *Pinta*, 71, gossip about the reward for sighting land, 87
Variation (see Compass)
Varnhagen Baron, his evidence as to the handwriting of Columbus, 62, his theory of the landfall, 96, 97 his discovery of a manuscript copy of the Columbus letter describing the first voyage, 131 his theories respecting Vespucci, 348, 349
Vasco Nuñez de Balboa with Bastidas, 243, 309, with Enciso at Darien, 312 governor of Darien, 313, his character, 313, 314, alliances, 314 discovery of the South Sea, 315 death 316
Vega Real, in Española, discovery, 159 soldiers of Margarit in, 161 cruelties of the Spaniards in, 172, Fort Conception built 174, battle, 176, insurrection, 194, 196, Admiral in, when Bobadilla arrived, 204
Vega, Garcilasso de la, his repetition of the fable about the pilot who had reached the Indies before Columbus, 37
Vela Cabo de la, farthest point of Ojeda 240, 245 rounded by Bastidas, 243
Velasquez, Diego de, governor of Cuba, 300, 317
Velez, Alonzo of Seville, seaman in the *Santa Maria*, left at Navidad, 70
Venetian embassy (see Trivigiano)
Venezuela village on piles discovered by Ojeda, 240 reached by Bastidas, 243, intended settlement, 244
Venice, John Cabot, a citizen of, 226, 228, Portolani at, 9
Veragua first heard of, 257, river of, 259, Indians, 261, river explored by the Adelantado, 261 settlement, 267, 268, account of by Bartolomé Columbus, 305, Nicuesa made governor, 310
—— Dukes of, 219, 320, 321
Vergara, Francisco de, of Seville, seaman in the *Santa Maria* left at Navidad, 70
—— Juan de, one of Ojeda's captains, 244, sent to Jamaica for supplies, 245, 246

Vespucci, Amerigo, provision dealer, 186; in voyage of Ojeda, 239, visit to Columbus at Seville, 288, 345, notice of, 344, 345, discussion of his alleged first voyage, 346–350, editions of his letters, 351, 352, not responsible for the name of America, 355
Vico Dritto (see Ponticello)
Villa, Pedro de, of Santoña, seaman in the first voyage, 71, lot for a pilgrimage to Loreto fell on, 123
Villar, seaman of the *Niña*, left at Navidad, 71
Villatoro, Pedro de, mutinous sailor at Jamaica, 278
Virgin Islands discovered, 153
Viseu, Bishop of (see Calzadilla)
Vizcaina, ship in the last voyage, 251, boatswain drowned, 256, abandoned at Puerto Bello, 267
Voices heard by Columbus, 268, 266
Vows for pilgrimages on board the *Niña* during the storm, 223

WALDSEEMÜLLER, Walter (called Hylacomylus), printed his "Cosmographiæ Introductio" at St Dié, and proposed the name of America, 352, better informed when he edited the Ptolemy of 1513, 355, his map and globe, name of America first appeared on his globe, 354
Waterspout, 259
Watling, John, the Buccaneer, notice of, 99
—— Island, identical with Guanahani, 84, 98, 99, 103, 105
Weavers at Genoa, their quarter, 4, schools for children of, 6, Colombos mentioned as weavers, 4
Weed (see Sargasso)
Western voyage, argument in favour of a, to the Indies, 33, 34 (see Indies)
Wineland, 23
Winsor, Justin, work on Columbus, 340
Worcester, William of, expedition in search of Brazil under Thylde, mentioned in the Chronicle of, 21
Worthington, supposed to have given the papers of Cabot to Philip II, 233

XANTICUA, in Española, fort built at, and named San Tomas, 159
Xaragua, in Española, 172, settlement by the Adelantado, 193; Roldan in, 197–204, Ovando's atrocities in, 275.
Ximenes (see Cisneros)
Xumeto (see Samoete).

YAGUI, river in Española, 153, 155, 159; Fort Magdalena built on the, 174
Yaguimo, 240
Yebra, 259
Yucatan discovered by Pinzon and Solis, 284, 317
Yucayoneque (see Abaco)
Yule, Colonel Sir Henry, description of a war-galley, 7, his estimate of the character of Columbus, 297.
Yumay, name for Long Island on the map of Herrera, 91

ZAITON, port of, described by Toscanelli, 31, 73, 110
Zamora, Alonzo de, mutinous sailor at Jamaica, 278
Zaragoza, the court at, 49
Zipango (see Cipango), in Behaim's globe, 73, Columbus believed he had reached, 83, mentioned by Cabot, 227
Zurbaran, painted for the monastery of Las Cuevas at Seville, 287

THE END.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, LONDON AND LIVERPOOL.

BIBLIOLIFE

Old Books Deserve a New Life
www.bibliolife.com

Did you know that you can get most of our titles in our trademark **EasyScript**™ print format? **EasyScript**™ provides readers with a larger than average typeface, for a reading experience that's easier on the eyes.

Did you know that we have an ever-growing collection of books in many languages?

Order online:
www.bibliolife.com/store

Or to exclusively browse our **EasyScript**™ collection:
www.bibliogrande.com

At BiblioLife, we aim to make knowledge more accessible by making thousands of titles available to you – quickly and affordably.

Contact us:
BiblioLife
PO Box 21206
Charleston, SC 29413

CPSIA information can be obtained
at www.ICGtesting.com
Printed in the USA
LVOW10s1016140917
548729LV00014B/142/P

#G62d

BIBLIOLIFE

9 781115 293723